RECORDINGS
Q=Man
Q1=Patty Wetterling
Q2=Jerry Wetterling
A=Kimala Bushbaum
A1=(Gary Zimmerman)
A2=(Nancy Bronson)
A3=(Bill Bronson)
A4=(DeeDee Schepp)
A5=(David Cone)
A6=(Jude)
A7=(Kay)
A8=(Linda King)
A9=(Mike Gibb)

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

Woman: Hi, is (Bill Branson) there?

Q: Uh, there's no one here right now, ma'am.

Woman: Okay, okay.

Q: Can I ask who's calling, please?

Woman: Yes. Um, I'm from the office in town here, and we're trying to follow up on one of the things that he did. Um, (Dave Collins) asked me to call him.

Q: Okay. Good morning, this is the Wetterlings, may I help you?

Man: Uh, good morning. Uh, can you tell me which, uh, church in St. Joseph is, uh, the sort of the headquarters for the Jacob Wetterling (unintelligible)?

Q: Okay, one moment, please.

Man: Do you know what church in, uh...

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

A: Yeah, is Jerry around?

Q: Pardon me?

A: Is Jerry around?

Q: Uh, he's not here right now. May I ask who's calling, please?

A: Um, yeah, it's a friend of his, Kimala Bushbaum.

Q: Pardon me?

A: It's a friend of his, Kimala Bushbaum. Um...

Q: Okay.

A: ...I, uh, was wondering if I could speak directly to them sometime today. Do you know if they're gonna get back?

Q: They will be back. I can, uh, take your, uh, your name...

((0:01:00))

Q: ...and number, and give them the message.

A: Oh, okay.

Q: Could you spell your last name, please?

A: Yeah, it's Kimala, K-I-M-A-L-A.

Q: K-I-M?

A: A-L-A.

Q: A-L-A?

A: Mm-hm. Last name is Bushbaum, B-U-S-H-B-A-U-M.

Q: You said D?

A: B as in Boy.

Q: Okay.

A: Mm-hm. And then my number is 259-4481.

Q: 4481?

A: Yeah, and, uh...

Woman: ...of the elementary school.

Q: Good morning - good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

A1: Uh, yes, is Mrs. Wetterling there?

Q: Pardon me?

A1: Is Mrs. Wetterling there?

Q: No, she's not here right now. Could I ask who's calling, please?

A1: This is (Gary Zimmerman). Just wanted to send a message down the line from - they announced this from the other school. They said that they're sorry that it happened, and they read it twice over the radio, back home.

Q: Which radio are...

A1: The (Provison) - (unintelligible), they played hockey last night. I talked to you last night, didn't I?

((0:02:00))

Q: Uh, you didn't talk to me, Gary, but you probably talked to someone else here.

A1: Oh, I mixed your voice up. Well, anyway, I talked to someone last night, and they got permission from the family, and I brought a copy over to the (Provison) Radio that was at the (A Train), they read it over there twice.

Q: Okay. And that's the message, that they read - they read it over the radio?

A1: Yeah, and they want to also send my - they told me to send my regards to the family, hopefully Jacob comes back alive.

Q: Okay.

A1: Okay?

Q: Thank you, (Gary).

A1: You're welcome.

Q: Bye.

A1: Bye-bye.

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

A2: Good morning. This is (Nancy Bronson).

Q: Good morning, Wetterlings. May I help you?

A3: Yeah, this is (Bill Bronson) calling back.

Q: Hello, (Bill). Um...

A3: I got - I got that number.

Woman: ...(Patty) I suppose too?

Q: Yeah.

Woman: Okay. I'm calling from the Viking Bank.

Q: Yeah.

Woman: And I'm supposed to be filming for them down here.

Q: Right.

Woman: Okay. Would you let them know that, uh, they wouldn't let us take the camera in?

Q: Okay.

Woman: And that...

((0:03:00))

Woman: ...I talked to (Jeff), and he's from the, uh, media, and he's going to be filming and he'll get films to the Wetterlings for us.

Q: (Jeff) from what?

Woman: Uh, I can't remember which one he's from.

Q: From - from one of the TV stations?

Woman: Yeah, yeah.

Q: Okay.

Woman: (KXTT)?

Q: So the filming is covered anyhow?

Woman: The filming's gonna be covered, but they won't let me do it with Jerry's...

Q: Yeah, their office didn't, uh, didn't sound very, uh, urgent, so...

A3: Okay, okay. 'Cause my son's home sick, and I may not get over there 'til this evening.

Q: 'Til this evening?

A3: Yeah, that's why - should I call back in a little while?

Q: I would, uh, I would say about an hour, when he's here.

A3: Okay. So may be back then?

Q: I believe so.

A3: Maybe by that time we could find that phone number.

Q: It may take every minute of that, but we'll find it.

A3: Okay. Otherwise...

Q: Ma'am?

A4: Is, uh, Jerry or Patty, either one in?

Q: Uh, may I ask who's calling?

A4: My name's (DeeDee) (unintelligible).

((0:04:00))

Q: (DeeDee)?

A4: Mm-hm.

Q: Last name?

A4: (Schnepp), (DeeDee Schnepp), (unintelligible).

Q: Okay. Do you know the Wetterlings?

A4: No, I don't.

Q: Okay. Uh, (DeeDee), I'd be, uh, happy to take a message and - and get it to them and take your phone number. They're busy right now.

A4: They are?

Q: Yes.

A4: Okay. I was just watching a television show called "Reward."

Q: Yes.

A4: Okay. A little girl was abducted. Wasn't Jacob at a ballgame?

Q: Uh, no.

A4: Where were they at?

Q: Wetterlings.

A5: Hi, cupcake. This is (Jude).

Q: Well, hello there.

A5: We're down at the video store. Would you ask, uh, uh, (Nancy) if it's okay if her kids...

Q: Wetterlings.

Woman: Uh, isn't this (unintelligible)?

Q: Pardon me?

Woman: (Unintelligible).

Q: No, is this, uh...

((0:05:00))

Q: Well, let me see. Did you call earlier for them, (Liz)?

Woman: Yeah.

Q: (Liz).

Woman: I'm a friend of (Liz)'s, yes, yes.

Q: Pardon me?

Woman: I'm a friend of (Liz)'s, yes.

Q: Oh, okay. Uh, (Liz) called me earlier and, uh, wanted to talk to (Dick) or (Judy), and...Wetterlings.

A3: Hi, this is (Nancy Bronson). Could I (unintelligible) please?

Q: Uh, what's the last name?

A3: (Bronson).

Q: (Bronson)? Okay.

A6: Hello? Hi.

Q: Wetterlings.

A6: Yeah, Mr. (Bill Bronson), please.

Q: Uh, just one second. Can I ask who's calling?

A6: (David Cone).

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

A7: Yeah, good morning. This is (Kay), Patty's sister. Are they up over there?

Q: I...

((0:06:00))

Q: ...one moment please. (Kay)?

A7: (Unintelligible).

Q: Patty's sister?

Woman: Uh, (unintelligible) (Kay). She wants to talk to Patty?

Q: Anybody, she asked. Your sister.

Q1: Hello?

A8: Good morning.

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

A8: Hi, this is (Linda King). Um, would you just pass on a message to Patty that we are going to church right from the hotel, we're not gonna stop at the house first?

Q: Going to church from the hotel?

A8: Right, and this is (Linda).

Q: (Linda Kay - King)?

A8: (King).

Q: Oh, yeah. Okay, thank you.

A8: Thanks a lot.

Q: Bye.

A8: Bye.

Q: Good morning, this is the Wetterlings. May I help you?

Woman: Is Jerry - is he there?

Q: Jerry is not in right now, ma'am.

Woman: Okay. Patty either?

Q: No. May I ask who's calling please?

Woman: Uh, his mother. I'll call back.

Q: Okay.

Woman: Are they at church?

Q: Yes, they are, ma'am.

Woman: All right, thank you.

Q: Thank you.

Woman: I will call back.

Q: Okay.

Woman: Thanks.

((0:07:00))

Q2: Yes, this is Jerry.

Man: Hi, how are you, Dr. Wetterling? I'm sorry to disturb you during, uh, this time. Um...

Q: Hello?

Woman: Hello, Wetterlings?

Q: Yes.

Woman: Yeah. I (unintelligible).

Q2: Hello?

A9: Hello, Jerry?

Q2: Yes.

A9: Uh, this is (Mike Gibb) calling.

Q1: Hello, Wetterlings.

Man: Yeah, (unintelligible).

Q1: Pardon?

Man: Is this, uh, um, this is the Wetterlings?

Q1: Yes, it is.

Man: Oh, yeah. (Unintelligible). I just, you know, I - my wife - I just found here a note from my wife that your son was kidnapped?

Q1: Yes.

Man: Oh, I'm sorry to hear that.

Q1: We're working on everything. We've got national coverage, and we're working and saying a lot of prayers.

((0:08:00))

Q: Hello?

Woman: Hi, is (Carol) there?

Q: Uh, (Carol Schleicher)?

Woman: Yeah.

Q: Uh, yeah. You want to talk to her?

Woman: Yeah, I'm her ride.

Q: You're her ride?

Woman: Yeah.

Q: Okay. Just a - just a moment.

Woman: Thanks.

Q1: Hello, Wetterlings.

Woman: Um, I was wondering what anyone can do to help find Jacob?

Q1: Um, who's calling?

Woman: Um, (unintelligible).

Q1: Um, we have - they have posters. I guess the only thing I can tell you to do is tomorrow, to call the Carver County Sheriff's Department. I can give you the phone number. Are you still there?

Woman: Yeah.

Q1: Okay. We can give you the phone number, and you could call there and, um, see if they have any volunteer kinds of things to do. Do you want the number?

Woman: Um, if you have it.

Q1: Okay. It's 251-4240.

Woman: Okay.

Q1: And, um, I'm not sure exactly how they've got...

((0:09:00))

Q1: ...things organized there, so you could call there if you wanted to. I think the posters are taken care of though. But you might see if they have anything else going on tomorrow, okay?

Woman: Okay.

Q1: Thanks for...will (Amy) be in school tomorrow? I have no idea. I kind of don't think so, 'cause no one's slept around here for two nights.

Woman: Mm-hm.

Q1: So, I don't think so, but I don't know.

Woman: Okay. Well, I hope you find him.

Q1: Okay. Thanks for calling.

Woman: Yeah.

Q1: Bye-bye.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

The following will be a statement of Caren, spelled C-a-r-e-n, middle name Jean, spelled J-e-a-n, last name Heinen, spelled H-e-i-n-e-n. Statement will be taken on November 7, 1989, at approxiamtely 12:05 p.m. Statement is being taken at the Stearns County Law Enforcement Center. Special Agent Sigafoos of the State Crime Bureau and Special Agent Duma of the State Crime Bureau are present at this statement. Statement is in regards to BCA case #89000535, kidnapping offense of Jacob Wetterling.

DS: Would you give me your full name please.

CH: Caren Jean Heinen.

DS: And your address Caren.

CH: 14 1/2 N.E. Third Street, Waite Park, Minnesota.

DS: And Caren, what is your home phone number.

CH: 654-1536.

DS: And your date of birth.

CH: 7-15-68.

DS: Caren, are you married.

CH: Yes.

DS: What's your husband's name.

CH: Paul Heinen.

DS: Paul. Where are you currently employed.

CH: I'm employed privately through babysitting. I babysit.

DS: Okay, where is your husband employed.

CH: RA Morten in town.

DS: Okay, do you have a phone number for there.

CH: Yes. 251-0262.

DS: Caren, I believe that on November 5th of 1989, you were interviewed by a Special Agent Kohout and a Special, was there anyone else with her.

CH: Yes. Some guy named Bob I think.

DS: Okay, and, Robert Berg, would it be.

CH: Yeah.

5/224

DS: Caren, what information, how did you come in contact with the two Crime Bureau agents. Had you contacted the Task Force.

CH: I contact, I called the Sheriff's Department first because someone had told me that any, they're looking for any information and I had told somebody that what I, you know, what I had seen the night of October 22nd, and they said call it in and I did.

DS: Okay, Caren, where had you gone on the evening of October 22, 1989, when you saw this suspicious activity.

CH: Where did I go.

DS: Yeah, what location were you at.

CH: I was at the Tom Thumb by O'Haras on 33rd and Third.

DS: And what city is that in.

CH: St. Cloud.

DS: Okay, approximately what time did you arrive there.

CH: Hmm. I figure between, somewhere between 8:30 and 9:00, but I figure approximate time would be about ten to 9.

DS: Okay, who had you gone to that with.

CH: With my husband Paul.

DS: Is this the location you normally shop.

CH: Yeah, I work there.

DS: You don't work there currently.

CH: No. I do not work there currently. I did work there.

DS: Okay, did you go into the store or did something draw your attention prior to you going into the store.

CH: I did not go into the store.

DS: Okay, why.

CH: Because I was just waiting for my husband to fill up the tires with air.

DS: Okay, so you and your husband went into this Tom Thumb store which has gas pumps and such, right.

CH: Yes.

S/225

DS: And he was filling up your vehicle with air.

CH: Yes.

DS: Okay, did you observe something that caused you some concern.

CH: Yeah, some people, this man, two men had pulled up and they were not in, they were in different vehicles.

DS: Okay, let's talk about the first man, okay.

CH: Okay.

DS: Not, the one that we'd been talking about here.

CH: Okay.

DS: Okay.

CH: Yep. Yep.

DS: Was there one man in a certain vehicle that caused your attention.

CH: Yes.

DS: What vehicle caused, you know, did you notice first.

CH: Um, I noticed, I noticed a Monte Carlo first and then I noticed a white van.

DS: Okay, let's run by then you notice the Monte Carlo first. What brought your attention to this Monte Carlo.

CH: There was a gentleman inside of it and I believe he got out. I'm not really sure. I don't remember how it happened, but he was standing by a garbage can and he was glaring at me.

DS: Okay, now how old was this individual.

CH: I figure between 20 and 30.

DS: Okay.

CH: Not really sure.

DS: So where, we understand there's this Monte Carlo, could you describe that to Terry and myself then.

CH: The Monte Carlo was maroon color, it was an older car. Um. I don't recall if there was rust or anything, it looked, not beat up, but it didn't look in really good shape.

DS: Okay. How many doors.

CH: I believe it was a 2 door.

DS: Was it all one color.

CH: I thought it was one color. Not really positive on that.

DS: Did you have a chance to notice what state it was licensed in.

CH: I saw it, Minnesota.

DS: Okay, is there anything else you readily recall about this vehicle.

CH: Um, I thought it might have had a slightly raised back on it.

DS: Okay. Do you recall anything about the windows.

CH: Um, all I remember is I think they were clear.

DS: Okay. What first drew your attention to this. Were your first drawn your attention drawn to the Monte Carlo or the individual that was in it.

CH: My attention was first to the individual because he was staring at me and I though he was going to rob the Tom Thumb.

DS: Had you seen him exit or get out of this vehicle.

CH: Yes.

DS: Okay, and then let's, let's talk about what this individual looked like. Describe him for us.

CH: I can't remember facial features, but I just remember that he just looked dark. Um, dark hair, clothing seemed dark and he didn't look clean cut. He just, he looked kind of scroungy.

DS: Okay. How old would you say he was.

CH: Between 20 and 30.

DS: Okay.

CH: Somewhere in that age.

DS: What about the length of his hair.

CH: I'd say shoulder length. It wasn't real long and it wasn't real short.

DS: Okay. And what do you think he was wearing if you can recall his clothing.

CH: I can't.

DS: Okay. We don't want to push you then. How would you describe him for his build then.

CH: I would say he was um, I don't about 5'8", 5'10", somewhere in there. I thought he was a shorter man. I mean not short, but shorter. And, I thought he was skinny.

DS: Okay, so he could have been a thinner build. Would you guess a weight on him.

CH: Um, how tall are you.

DS: I'm 5'11".

CH: Can I ask how much you weight, ha, ha.

DS: 163.

CH: I would say he's, and what do you consider a frame like yours.

DS: Probably slender.

CH: Okay, that.

DS: Okay, so you figure he's similar to my height and build, right.

CH: But thinner than you.

DS: Okay, thinner than I am.

CH: Thinner than you.

DS: Okay, so he's somewhere under 160 lbs., best guess.

CH: Yeah.

DS: You don't, was he wearing a jacket or anything.

CH: I though he kind of looked like he had warmer clothes on you know. But I think maybe long sleeves.

DS: Okay, so you described him, was he caucasian, white male.

CH: I think he was white male.

DS: Okay, but you said he had dark hair.

5/228

CH: Yeah.

DS: Did he have a mustache or a beard or anything.

CH: I don't know why, but he seemed hairy. Maybe he was just wearing dark clothes and you know people appear dark like that.

DS: Do you think you could recognize him again if you saw him.

CH: I don't think so.

DS: What did he do then after he got out of this vehicle. Where did he go to, did he go into the store.

CH: He went into the store and that's when I started looking at his vehicle because I thought, okay this kind looks kind of weird. He's starring at me awfully hard and, and so I thought he's going to go in to rob it. And I'm going to be the hero and I'm going to know what the car looks like and

DS: Karen, I got called out of the room for a brief second here and I think we left off with this individual had got out of the Monte Carlo that you described for us.

CH: Um hm.

DS: Where did he go then.

CH: Um, he went in the Tom Thumb and he came out and I didn't see him buy anything. He might have had a pack of gum, I don't know. I just, in his hands I didn't see anything visibly when, and then he went to his car.

DS: Okay, did he leave then.

CH: Um, I can't really remember any order things happened, then approximately I think that's when the van pulled up. A white van had pulled up.

DS: Okay, so Caren, is it correct, you don't know if the Monte Carlo's left. Did you see this man that we just described on the Monte Carlo associate or talk with anyone else.

CH: No.

DS: Did he talk to the man in the white van.

CH: I didn't see him, no.

DS: But he had stared at you and you were a little suspicious of him.

5/229

CH: Very.

DS: Okay, now his, the white van pulls up,

CH: Um hm.

DS: Is the Monte Carlo still there.

CH: Yes, I think so because I was stilling looking at the car and then the van pulled in the way.

DS: Okay, describe this van for me, you see a van come up, what does it look like.

CH: It was a white van. It didn't have any rust on it. I thought it was like it was like an older model van and it. I thought it might have said econoline on it, but I wasn't sure.

DS: It may have said econoline but you're not sure.

CH: Yeah, I'm not sure.

DS: Did you see if it was a Chevy, a Ford, a Dodge or anything. Do you know.

CH: No idea. I don't know many.

DS: Okay, was it one of these smaller ones or.

CH: No, I thought it was, it was a full size van. It wasn't like shrink or

DS: Now on the side, did you see the, this one side of it.

CH: I, the side that I seen, I might have seen both sides, but the only side I remember was the side, it was the driver's side of the van.

DS: Any doors or anything that you saw.

CH: I, nothing except for the front door. I didn't see any doors or anything.

DS: When you saw the front door, is that, you mean the driver's door where he gets in and out.

CH: Yeah, the driver's door.

DS: Okay, do you know if, did you have a chance to see if it had plates on it, you know registered plates.

CH: Yeah, I think I looked at the plates.

5/230

DS: Did anything stand out in your mind about them. Were they different or anything.

CH: Not that I can remember.

DS: Do you think it was from this state.

CH: I thought it was from Minnesota.

DS: You didn't, you didn't see anything to tell you different, right.

CH: Right. I usually remember if it's from another state.

DS: Is there anything else you can tell us about that van.

CH: Um, yeah, there was like a, I thought there was like a, a vent thing that stuck out on the top. A slight, like a square thing that stuck out on the top.

DS: Okay, on the roof of this van like

CH: Yeah. Right above like where the driver and the passenger would sit. Kind of in there.

DS: Okay, anything else at all about that van, Caren. The wheels, do you recall.

CH: Yeah, the wheels were um, they were in pretty good, I mean they were in nice shape. But they weren't chrome, they were just like, I don't know how to describe it. But they didn't like, they had a nice, um rims on it. That's what you call, rims.

DS: Okay, it had nice rims.

CH: Yeah, but they weren't shinny or anything. They looked like they were driving on, you know, didn't look like it was newly washed.

DS: But the rims caught your attention.

CH: Yeah.

DS: Were they spoke.

CH: No.

DS: Okay, but a different type of rim. Do you think they were what you see on stock vans or.

CH: On what vans.

S/231

DS: You know vans that come straight from, you know, the dealers or was it something that someone would have added. Or do you have any idea.

CH: I don't have any idea. I could draw a picture of it, but I don't have any idea.

DS: Okay, we'll have you draw a picture after we're through with this.

CH: Okay.

DS: Okay, who was in this vehicle.

TD: Let's stay on the van a minute. Do you recall there's two different types of vans.

CH: Okay.

TD: What I'm speaking of is there's an engine compartment, and there's a pit of a nose

CH: Yeah, right.

TD: And there's ones that are just flat, no windshields or anything.

CH: Yeah, yeah.

TD: What type of one was this.

CH: Um, I thought it was the type that was, it wasn't, it wasn't straight down, but it was slightly out.

TD: Okay.

CH: But not way out.

TD: Okay.

CH: Okay.

TD: So that's what you refer to as engine compartment.

CH: Yeah, it was just slightly out, but it wasn't straight down.

DS: Caren how many people were in this van.

CH: I only seen one.

DS: What did this person do.

5/232

CH: The man got out, it was a white male. Got out of the car, or out of the van, excuse me. He got out of the van, he went in the Tom Thumb store, I didn't see him inside. I don't why, I just didn't watch him.

DS: Did you see him enter the store.

CH: Yeah, I seen him go into the store, but I don't remember what he did in the store, because I could see pretty well, it was pretty lit up in the store because it was dark. Um, he came out and that's all I remember was he was standing by the van and I was looking at him and he unwrapping cigarettes.

DS: Okay standing by the van.

CH: By his van.

DS: Okay, describe this individual for us, would you.

CH: Um, he was a taller man. Um, he was I would say he weighted about 200 lbs., um I though he was heavy, not heavy, but heavier set.

DS: Okay.

CH: I didn't think he had a pot belly on him, you know nothing big in the front but it was, he had

DS: Okay, how old, how old would you guess him.

CH: 50, 65, I don't know. I don't really know those ages that well, but older.

DS: Okay. Do you recall, what about his hair.

CH: I don't remember nothing except for I thought his hair was graying, on the sides it looked or on the bottom by the neck behind the ear it looked thicker, kind of

DS: Okay.

CH: Not real thick hair, but thicker.

DS: Did you see the top of his head.

CH: I don't remember.

DS: Okay, that's fair enough. Do you recall what he was wearing.

CH: I thought he was wearing um, like a flannel shirt. Um, a red plaid flannel shirt and I thought it was like a white background. I'm not really sure on that either, but I just remember it was a plaid shirt. And I thought he might have

S/233

CH: been wearing another shirt underneath it. You know, like that was just like an overshirt over that one.

DS: Okay.

CH: But I don't recall what was underneath.

DS: What was suspicious about this man.

CH: Hmm. I didn't really think anything suspicious of him. He didn't stare or anything, but I, it was just funny how they kind of pulled up one after another. That's about the only

CH: thing I thought about him. He never stared or anything. He seemed to go about his own business.

DS: Did he seem, he just went in did his purchase.

CH: That's it, just walked out.

DS: Okay, now you never saw either of these two talking together then.

CH: Never, not that I can recall, no.

DS: Okay, quite a few people come and go from there, right.

CH: Yeah.

DS: Okay, you don't know if he was wearing glasses or anything.

CH: I don't think either of them were wearing glasses.

DS: Okay, what, how long did this individual stay in the parking lot.

CH: He didn't stay in the parking lot.

DS: Okay, so he wasn't loitering or lurking around in there.

CH: No. Maybe in the store he was looking around, but not outside. I didn't see him looking around outside.

DS: Okay. How long would you say he was there, total period of time.

CH: Um, what a normal person would come and go. But, the time that we were there, I know you just asked, you said is it a busy store. Yes it is busy store, but at that time it was not busy.

DS: Okay, so after he leaves, what does he do. Anything unusual. He got in his van, right.

CH: Yeah.

DS: Did you see anyone else with him.

CH: No.

DS: Okay, then what did he do.

CH: I think he went like to a do not enter place along side the store and then he took off, I don't know which way or anything. I don't remember which way.

DS: Okay. Now you were interviewed on November 5th and provided similar information, right.

CH: Right.

DS: What has happened since then. Were you shown some composites or any photographs on that date.

CH: Yeah.

DS: Okay. Do you recall what those photographs were of.

CH: They were of males.

DS: Did you see any photo, or composites on that date that looked similar to the man you had seen in this van or the Monte Carlo.

CH: I seen a man, there was only one older gentleman on the pictures

DS: Okay.

CH: And they asked me, does the older man resemble this and I said, he had a nose like this.

DS: Okay.

CH: But I said I cannot remember the hair because I didn't remember the top of the head.

DS: Caren, today I showed you six photographs that were, you know, in a manilla envelope, all bordered off with no names showing and all similar.

CH: Yes. Right.

DS: When you looked at them out of those photographs did some, did any individual or any photographs catch your attention.

CH: Yes.

S/235

DS: Okay, do you recall the numbers of those.

CH: Yeah, 2 and 6 I believe.

DS: And when you looked closer between 2 and 6, which one of those photographs look the most like the person you saw at the store.

CH: Definitely 6 because he looked older.

DS: Okay. Anything else in that photograph that caught your attention.

CH: Yeah, some things about his facial features and especially, the nose and there's something about his look and his hair on the side, it was graying.

DS: So you're, what you have said to us is that that picture looks the most like the man you saw.

CH: Yes.

DS: You're not positively saying it was the man.

CH: Right, right. I'm not saying it was the man.

DS: Okay, but it's most similar.

CH: Yes.

DS: I'm showing you, Caren now, a composite. Were you shown this on November 5th.

CH: Yes.

DS: Okay. That's composite #3 for the record. Caren, did you see something on the news last night that prompted you to talk to other people or that we re-contacted you. Did you see more additional information on any news program.

CH: What.

DS: You didn't see anything additional on the news last night to call us. We contacted you again then.

CH: Right.

DS: I think one thing I forgot to ask Caren, at the time you were at this store, were there any young children around or teenagers.

CH: No. In fact I don't think what I can remember, it was only those two vehicles. I didn't think there was like a lot of

S/236

CH: people going in and out. Because the reason I got, the reason I think that and I know that is when I worked at the store, when we cashed out the till, you did it when there was nobody around.

DS: Okay.

CH: And I could see the gentleman in the store counting the money. Cashing, you know what I mean, running the money.

DS: Okay, so Caren there weren't any other people around in there, no kids.

CH: No.

DS: Caren, at any time that you had been there while your husband was filling up the tires, did you see any children in the area.

CH: No.

DS: Caren, when did the van and the Monte Carlo leave in relation to each other. Did one leave prior to the other one.

CH: Yeah.

DS: How much time span between the two of them leaving.

CH: One backed up and went and the other backed up and went. There wasn't really a time span.

DS: Okay, we're talking they weren't, one didn't 2 minutes ahead of the other.

CH: No, I don't think so. I think they left together.

DS: Okay, but, okay thank you Caren, that will be all of this statement.

Statement of William Donald Brown
#89000535 - 11/7/89
Page 1

The following will be a statement of William, middle name Donald, last name Brown, spelled B-r-o-w-n. Statement will be taken on November 7, 1989, at approximately 6:02 p.m. Statement is taken at the Stearns County Law Enforcement Center by Special Agent Dennis Sigafoos of the Minnesota Bureau of Criminal Apprehension. Statement is in reference to the abduction of Jacob Wetterling on October 22, 1989. The BCA case number is 89000535.

DS: Sir, would you give me your full name please.

WB: William Donald Brown.

DS: And your date of birth.

WB: May 7, 1931.

DS: And your address.

WB: My address at the present time is Grand Manor Apartments, apartment 13, Rockville, Minnesota.

DS: How old are you.

WB: I'm 58.

DS: And how, what is your phone number.

WB: 253-2566.

DS: Where are you employed Bill.

WB: At the Cold Spring Granite Company.

DS: Bill, how long have you been employed there.

WB: Approximately 7 and 1/2 years.

DS: Bill, earlier today we talked to you, it was based on that you had called in a lead early that you had kind of a psychic feeling of where Jacob Wetterling was.

WB: Yes.

DS: Okay, and that was called in which day. Right after.

WB: I would say maybe on, on Monday, I'm not sure, the day after the, kidnapping.

DS: Okay, now and we came out today and talked to you more and you went with us in the vehicle on your own free will I believe.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Did any of those other officers other that other than I know, other than

myself promise you anything.

WB: No. I was treated strictly as a gentleman and, ah, very professionally.

DS: Okay. Bill, Mr. Brown, you know that you don't have to be here now talking to me, but you indicated that you came down here on your own free will.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay, right now you're with me alone in this room, but do you want to leave, are you willing to cooperate.

WB: No, I'm willing to stay and to do whatever I can.

DS: Okay, basically what I'd like to cover with you, so I can't read my own writing Bill, is how long have you been employed as a guard at the, is it Cold Spring Granite Works.

WB: Cold Spring Granite Company.

DS: Okay, how long have you been employed there.

WB: Ah, 7 and 1/2 years.

DS: And where have you resided during these 7 and 1/2 years.

WB: Ah, I've resided 2, well let me see, going on 3 years in Rockville and the other 4 years in Cold Spring.

DS: Okay. And what was your address at Cold Spring.

WB: The address at Cold Spring, I can't remember exactly, it was ah, 6, oh it was 6 something, First, First Street in, ah Cold Spring.

DS: Okay, what is your current job, are you a supervisor or what.

WB: I'm a supervisor of the guards out in the guards shack area, and then I have a superior which is over me.

DS: Okay, what is some of your functions consist of at your work.

WB: Okay, my functions are that I make up the schedules for the security people. I report to my superiors if anything is stolen or broken into or

DS: Do you do patrol work too.

WB: And we also do our patrol work to three different areas of the company.

DS: What are those three areas Bill. What areas are those.

WB: Okay, we have the main plant which is right in Cold Spring. And then

we have what we call a West Cold Spring plant which is 2 miles west of Cold Spring and it's a brand new plant. And then we have the South Cold Spring plant which is just about a mile south of the main plant. And then we have a east Cold Spring plant which is just approximately, I would say a mile from the main plant in Cold Spring.

DS: Okay. Bill, when you're on patrol duties, what kind of vehicle do you have.

WB: We have a truck, a 4 wheel truck which is provided by the company in case of winter snow storm, we get stuck or something. And it gets us around to all the

DS: What make is it.

WB: It's a Chevrolet.

DS: What color is it.

WB: It's a light blue, with dark stripes on it, and the Cold Spring Company logo on the door.

DS: Okay. Do you know the year of it.

WB: I would say that it's 2 years old.

DS: Bill, do you have any, what do you wear for a uniform at work.

WB: We wear black uniforms, trousers and shirt. In the summer time, we can wear white shirt, shorts and a shirt or black short sleeve shirt. In the winter time, I kind of advise the guys that it would be best if they wear the long, sleeve shirt.

DS: Okay. What do you wear for a jacket then in this colder weather we've been experiencing.

WB: Okay. We, I have ordered vests from police uniform shop down in Minneapolis and for the men and I also ordered winter jackets for the men too.

DS: What color are they.

WB: They are black also.

DS: Do you have one at this time or do the men.

WB: We all have complete uniforms.

S: Okay, how long, are they jackets, just jacket or are they hip length or what.

WB: Well, they're just about hip length, yes.

DS: Do they, what do you wear for a hat.

WB: I, each man has a, a hat, a trooper hat. Excuse me, I couldn't find the word.

DS: Okay. Do you have a badge.

WB: Yeah, we carry a badge on the jacket and also on the shirt in case we have to take our jackets off and somebody comes into the guard shack, they can see that we're authorized.

DS: Bill, do any of the men or yourself carry a weapon.

WB: No weapons, no clubs. I will not allow it.

DS: Do you own any guns.

WB: I do not sir.

DS: You own any hunting gun even.

WB: Not even a rifle.

DS: Bill, you know we talked to fairly I can say, 2, maybe 3, 400 people and we're asking everyone, I've asked myself 50 people, where they were on the night that Jacob was, was abducted. Could you describe to me where you were on that night.

WB: I, yeah, at 6:30, I, I start my shift.

DS: Is that p.m. or a.m.

WB: P.M.

DS: Okay.

WB: I, I do the same amount of work as the other men do. I do not give myself any favoritism.

DS: Okay. So you went to work at 6:30 p.m., can you just kind of synopsis, you know, what you did.

WB: Well, I get there and the first thing that I do is that I fill in my check in sheet and my check in card. And, my report sheets also. I have to fill them. So that way they are already there and in case maybe one of the managerial people come in they

DS: I guess Bill, more what I was getting at, you know, could you kind of fill me in where you worked from 6:00 to certain locations and times.

WB: Oh, excuse me, I'm sorry. Yeah, I start making one run right after I relieve the other guard. We, on weekends, we pull 12 hour shifts. And when I relieve the other guard then I start my runs. I get in the truck

DS: Okay, I guess what time did you get into the truck that night.

WB: Okay, after filling out my check in forms, I would say about twenty to 7, quarter to 7.

DS: Okay, and then where do you runs take you to.

WB: My runs take me around the main plant and then out to the east plant. I open that and I drive in and all I do is check on the outside, no children or anybody is in there. I drive out again, lock it up, drive up to the south plant and I drive around the whole plant area, which is fairly good, well lit up.

DS: Okay. Right.

WB: So I don't have to go through all the buildings and everything. And I check and see that the building is lit from the corner.

DS: Where would you, how long were you on this routine patrol then.

WB: On a patrol of that length, it takes approximately about an hour and 45 minutes to 2 hours.

DS: Okay, so you're, did you go to any of these other locations you talked about.

WB: I went to every one of them.

DS: Okay, when did you, so how long, when were you next back where you might have checked in with someone.

WB: I don't check in with anybody. The guard is right there.

DS: Okay.

WB: And on Sunday night, the men start coming to work approximately about 10 to 11:00.

DS: Okay, were you there to check any of them.

WB: No, they, they, some come through the main gate and others come through the side gate.

DS: Bill, did anyone else work with you on that day. (knock at the door) Come on in. Bill, the tape was off. I was out in the hallway. Did anyone ask any questions except about your health while I was, when the tape was off.

B: Um,

DS: I introduced you to a polygraph examiner. He asked you about your health.

WB: Yes. Yes. He asked me about my health, if it was alright to take a polygraph.

DS: Okay, he didn't question you about anything else.

WB: No sir.

DS: Bill, right after this we had to shut the tape off again, and I believe at that time we were interrupted and also you signed a consent to search form for your residence right at Grand Manor, apartment 13, Rockville, and also on your 1978 Mercury station wagon bearing Minnesota license number 297CKH.

WB: Yes.

DS: Okay. And you read over the statement yourself on that about allowing us consent to search.

WB: Yes I have.

DS: And I think I explained to you, you don't have to let us do that Bill.

WB: I'm willing to let.

DS: Okay, thanks, thanks Bill. Bill, we're, we're going to try to get back with the statement here if no one comes in. We were on routine patrol between those three locations driving that truck you described. You said it was a Chevy.

WB: A Chevy.

DS: I think you described it on the tape.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay, what time do you think you got done with this kind of routine patrol.

WB: Okay, my first patrol, I, let me see. ended I would say some place around, 2 hours after I left the guard shack, I left about quarter to 7. And I would say, well some place around quarter to 9 was my first run, and I took a 15 minute break.

DS: Where do you take the break at. Is

WB: In the guard shack.

DS: Was there anyone else there then. Can put you there.

WB: At that time on Sunday, no sir.

DS: Okay. When is the first time then that you saw someone else at the

plant or the guard shack that can verify your whereabouts for us Bill.

WB: Okay, the mechanics and the electricians, they start coming in to work and I usually try to be at the gate so I can see them coming in.

DS: Did you meet with any of them and talk to them.

WB: Well they, no I don't, because sometimes they have a minute or two minutes to check their card in so they're not docked on their card, so I don't bother them too much.

DS: Okay, what I'm trying to get at Bill, do you think some of them saw you.

WB: Oh yes. I'm very easy. We have windows all the guard shack and they always look in and wave to me.

DS: So on Sunday, you think you would have been in that guard shack at what time.

WB: Oh definitely, yes.

DS: At what time Bill.

WB: Ah, 10:00, 11:00.

DS: How long do you stay in that guard shack then.

WB: Ah, I'm in and out many times through the night, but I try to be there when the people come to work.

DS: Bill, you might have been in there at 10, or it may have been as late as 11 when you were in there.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay, what do you do the rest of your shift til you get off. Are you in and out of the building.

WB: I'm in and out of the guard shack and I'm checking different buildings.

DS: Okay, are you on patrol between the three buildings.

WB: Yes sir. Now sometimes I do a walking patrol in the main plant.

DS: Is there anyone, Bill, you can recall on this night that you had a specific conversation with for something.

WB: Let me see. Ah, no. Because I feel then I get away from my job as security.

DS: Bill, is there any, no other security guard came on on Sunday then.

WB: No. I'm the only one.

DS: Okay. Bill, where do you park your personal car when you go to work.

WB: Right next to the guard shack.

DS: Okay. Is that the only car you have.

WB: Yeah, that's the only one.

DS: Okay. Bill, you talked about another name that you have, you know. Could you kind of run that by me. You give your date of birth as May 7, 1931, right.

WB: Yes.

DS: What was this other name you may have.

WB: James Long, L-o-n-g.

DS: Is there a middle name with that.

WB: No.

DS: Okay. Can you briefly tell me about how this occurred.

WB: Ah, briefly, when I was born, there was some type of dissention between my mother's family and my father's family. My mother's was Catholic, my father's family was Protestant. When I met my mother once when I was 16 1/2 and she told me the story.

DS: You hadn't seen your mother until you were 16 1/2.

WB: That's right. I was in an orphanage then.

DS: Okay. From what, from the time you were a small infant.

WB: A month old.

DS: Til you were 16 1/2, you were in the orphanage.

WB: Yes.

DS: Where was this at Bill.

WB: In Brooklyn, New York.

DS: Okay, then you first saw your mother when you were 16 1/2.

B: Right.

DS: She tells you you're dad's name is, what then.

WB: James Lo, his name was Lawrence Long.

DS: Okay, and your mom's name.

WB: Was Elsie Brown.

DS: Okay.

WB: And they gave me my grandfather's name and turned me into the orphanage under that name but the orphanage evidently didn't check the records.

DS: When did you get out of the orphanage.

WB: When I was 16 1/2.

DS: Where did you go then Bill.

WB: I went to work at a grocery store and I worked and I had a room and

DS: Were you

WB: took care of yourself.

DS: Were you in foster homes prior to working.

WB: Ah, I was in foster homes from when I was a young child until I was about 12.

DS: Then you went back to the orphanage.

WB: Yes.

DS: Did you have problems when you were with these foster parents.

WB: Oh, I didn't have any problems, but the thing is that they, the people just didn't, for some strange reason, keep the children when they were fostered out, they didn't keep them long.

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS

B:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB: I'm sorry I can't remember too much. When I was around 5 years old I had a car accident. I walked out into the street and I was unconscious and some of my memory right there at that time.

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

B:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

B:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS: Bill, you got a son Adam, right.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Do you have any other children Bill.

WB: No, he's my only relative that I have alive.

DS: And he's 16.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Where, who is your wife.

WB: Ah, my wife's name was Rita. I can't, I'm awful sorry. I can't

DS: Do you know her maiden name.

WB: Bezeau.

DS: How do you spell that.

WB: It's French, it B-e-z-e-a-u.

DS: Where was she from Bill.

WB: She was from Monroe, Michigan.

DS: Monroe. Do you know her name now. Did she get remarried.

WB: Yes, she got remarried and that's why I can't remember his name.

DS: How long ago were you divorced then.

WB: The divorce took place about 8 years ago.

DS: Okay, and where were you living when you got divorced.

WB: Northern Michigan, in Marquette, Michigan.

DS: How long had you resided there with her Bill.

WB: I was going to school there, I transferred there because I was having some medical problems with my legs. I had blood clots in my legs.

DS: Bill, today when we came over to the house, you know, you had called in once right after Jacob's disappearance and you saw, you know, he was in a house. You know, you believed you were standing a field and could see this house, right.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Could you describe what you saw.

WB: It was kind of unusual. And what I tried to tell the lady I, I'm pretty bad at words but I'll do the best I can. I saw this here old white light kind of house, and it was very thin and very tall. And it came to a peak. And I said I'm sorry that's all I could tell ya except that the white paint was kind of peeling off a little bit on, on the, the part that I saw.

DS: What did you think was in there.

WB: I thought Jacob was there.

DS: Did you think he was alive or.

WB: At that time I felt he was alive.

DS: Okay, and that, you didn't talk to anyone else further about that then.

WB: It was so odd that I talked to my son about it and I talked to a lady by the name of, I think you know her, Betty

DS: Hartos.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Did you know Jerry and Patty Wetterling.

WB: Yes I do.

DS: When did you first meet them.

WB: I met them a number of years back, about 7 years or 6 1/2 to 7 years back.

DS: How did you happen to meet them Bill.

WB: Well, I got sick, and Jerry offered to look after Adam while I was gone to the hospital.

DS: Okay, how did he, how did you know that he, know Jerry Wetterling enough that you could ask him that. How did you first meet him. Through business or how.

WB: Ah, he, he came and offered.

DS: Had you ever met him prior to that.

WB: No sir.

DS: Okay, and that was, how long did he take care of your son.

WB: But he's in my faith and he tried to help.

DS: Is that how you knew him, through your faith.

WB: Yes.

DS: And that's Bahai.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay, are you still in that faith, Bill.

WB: Definitely, yes.

DS: How old, Bill, is your son when he lived with the Wetterlings.

WB: I'd say he was around 10, 11, something like that.

DS: How many days did he stay there.

WB: 10 days.

DS: Okay, where were they living when he stayed there.

WB: They were living upstairs from his office.

DS: Okay, in St. Joseph.

WB: In St. Joe.

DS: Okay, then how long did you keep the friendship. Did you see the Wetterlings after that.

WB: Well, my friendship was mainly by calling on the phone and everything because my job took up so much time and I said for some reason, if you check with my doctor you could find out, I kept getting tireder, tireder and tireder.

DS: What was the problem you had.

WB: I have a heart problem now.

DS: Okay.

WB: And that's

DS: You're on some other medicine. You told me you get panic attacks.

WB: Yes.

DS: What causes them.

WB: I don't know. Sir, you

DS: What medicine do you take for them.

WB: I take Zanzax.

DS: And that's spelled Z-

3: Z-a-n-z-a-x, I believe.

DS: Okay.

WB: It's very

DS: Okay. Now let's get back to Wetterlings, this was 8 years ago. Did you ever seen, when's the last time you saw them in recent history, prior to the abduction, before the abduction.

WB: Ah geez. I would say I saw Jerry maybe about a month and a half ago, but just a very short period of time.

DS: Where did you see him at.

WB: We hugged on another and wished each other well and um, where the heck was that.

DS: Was Jacob with him.

WB: No, no.

DS: When was the last time you seen Jacob.

WB: Oh, the last time I saw Jacob was when Adam stayed with him.

DS: Okay, 8 years ago.

B: Yes sir.

DS: Did you know, when did you learn that the Wetterlings had moved to a new house.

WB: I, I didn't know that until approximately about a month ago or two ago, when Adam, see Adam has been I guess in touch with them or something.

DS: Adam

WB: I called them on the phone.

DS: A month ago or.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Before Jacob's disappearance.

WB: He showed me where they lived.

DS: Who did.

WB: My son did.

DS: Oh was this before Jacob was gone.

B: Yeah, yeah.

DS: Okay. How much before.

WB: Oh, month, two months ago, three months ago.

DS: Did you talk to Jerry, did you see their new house.

WB: No, I never saw it until the day after Jacob had been abducted.

DS: Okay, you indicated that your son had showed you the house you know before Jacob had been abducted.

WB: No, he told me about it.

DS: Oh, did he tell ya it was a nice house.

WB: Yeah. He told me he had a lot of fun and

DS: Did he tell ya about, whereabouts it was in the new neighborhood.

WB: Yeah, but I couldn't place it see, not knowing St. Joe that well.

DS: Okay, this was before Jacob disappeared.

WB: I could go to their old house very easy.

DS: Okay, so how many times do you think you've seen Jacob in your life or you visited with Jacob.

WB: Ah, I would say that I saw Jacob maybe around 5 or 6 times because after I got out of the hospital, Adam and I went over and visited them over at their home, just a few times.

DS: How old was Adam then.

WB: 11 or 12, something like that.

DS: Which hospital were you in Bill.

WB: St. Cloud Hospital.

DS: Okay. Have you ever been in the VA Hospital there.

WB: No.

DS: Okay.

WB: No sir.

DS: Bill, so basically you had never been to their new house, but you'd been told where it was.

WB: Yes.

DS: Okay, by your son. Well, how did he know where it was.

WB: I think that he had gone over there and, observed, see I, I have to work.

DS: Okay.

WB: And sometimes I can't observe my religious holy day.

DS: So he was over at the Wetterlings.

WB: He went over to the Wetterlings and Jerry picked him up and took him over.

DS: Okay. Okay. Now, so you really don't see that much of the Wetterlings.

WB: No, I have not really, but my feelings are there for them, they're beautiful people.

DS: Okay. Bill, have you talked to the Wetterlings since Jacob disappeared.

WB: No sir. I went over this, not this past Sunday I didn't, but last week, last week I went over there.

DS: Did you speak with them.

WB: And I spoke with them.

DS: Who was with ya, anyone.

WB: Adam.

DS: So you've talked to Jerry and Patty since their son disappeared.

WB: Yes.

DS: What did you say to them.

WB: All I could say was I hugged them and said God will take care of him. He'll be back.

DS: Okay. Have you talked to them since that now, on the phone or anything.

WB: No, because Jerry and his wife are going through very, very trying times, morally, physically, spiritually, and I don't think that I should be calling and everything else and bothering them. But I have called another friend, this Betty

DS: Testing 1, 2, 3, test complete. This will be side 2 of the taped statement of William Brown. Special Agent Sigafoos is still taking the statement. Bill, I turned the tape over. Did anyone talk to ya about anything during the time that I was turning this tape over.

WB: No, I was right here in front of you.

DS: It just, just it took seconds, right.

WB: Right sir.

DS: We met with you then, Bill, today at your apartment and went for a drive and asked you to help if you could, you know, recall anything else, right.

WB: Yeah, it

DS: Okay, Bill

WB: It took me by surprise that you would listen to somebody's phone call saying I saw a white house in my mind.

DS: Okay, Bill, I'm showing you a little diagram that's dated 11/7/89.

WB: Yes.

DS: Okay. I'm going to put my initials up here in the corner. Can you put yours there for me.

WB: Sure.

DS: If you would please.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Okay, right somewhere in there. Now Bill, what is this, this in your writing. This isn't mine is it.

WB: Yes.

DS: You drew this for us.

WB: Yeah.

DS: And what is this here.

WB: That's Hwy. 94.

DS: Okay. And we have, we have some, what's this here.

WB: That looks like a, I saw that in mind, I saw a road that went next to this here

DS: Okay. What is this thing. What is the roads, there's some roads or trails drawn in, right. Is that a road or a trail there.

WB: That looks like a road.

DS: Okay. You drew this in.

WB: Yes.

DS: What is this thing they're all leading to.

WB: Ah, where granite, a quarry.

DS: Hold on a second. (vacuum cleaner in background) Okay, Bill, the tape's still running I take it. I had to go out of the room because that vacuuming noise.

WB: I think it is. I didn't touch it.

DS: Okay, that's okay, Bill. I didn't want to hear that vacuum cleaner. Okay, this is a quarry, right Bill.

WB: Yes.

DS: What is this thing in the middle of it.

WB: That is a, I call it a crane that they lift the blocks of quarry out of.

DS: Okay, and this going out here is what then. Was that, the arm of the crane did you say or what.

WB: That, I was trying, this here it the crane itself.

DS: What's this here then.

WB: And that's the arm of the crane that would lift the block up. I drew one line

DS: Okay, what are these two things up on the top end of the page.

WB: Those are cables that hold the middle

DS: Okay, what are these little round deals. Are they, you said they were something too.

WB: Just, one was a little house

DS: Okay.

WB: See and then what I, all these little, just these little dots and stuff were rocks.

DS: Okay, what are these things over here. You said just up above that crane on the, on the ledge there were some items. What were those that you saw in your vision.

WB: Yeah, there's a lot of trees and brush and rock piled up there.

DS: Okay, and you indicated there's some other things in there. You put, you see you put this thing and this here up towards the top of the

quarry pit and you said they were some kind of item. Remember.

WB: Yeah I do.

DS: What do you think they were. Were they old machines. were they houses. Were they

WB: Oh, excuse me. Yes sir. These, I'm trying to think. there's so many things here. These are old machines.

DS: Okay, that's,

WB: They was a couple of old machines on that side of the quarry.

DS: Now Bill, you drew this before we got there, right.

WB: I had it in my head before we got there.

DS: Have you ever been to this location before.

WB: No sir.

DS: And, did you picture water in this quarry.

WB: Yes.

DS: Okay, and also up here you drew a little house. That's, what is that house of.

WB: It's, it's, it's a little house that I was laying down after I heard Jacob was abducted. I started praying for him, that he would be found and every time my mind went to Jacob, I saw this little house and it was white and very thin and very high. And it came to a peak and that's exactly what I saw.

DS: And how far did you think it was from the quarry in this vision.

WB: I would say about a mile or two.

DS: Can you put that on here, is that your writing.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay. Okay now, we get back to Jacob, you and I talked about Jacob and we said, we asked you, what do you see else, you, you drove, Terry Duma drove, right. But we asked you to make turns and such, and where did we end up.

B: We ended up at the quarry.

DS: Okay. And you had some pretty strong feelings when we first went by it, right.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Okay, and then it took us about an hour and a half to find a way in, right Bill.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Okay, and you and I walked down there.

WB: I think that's why I made these here roads with dashes instead of just lines.

DS: Because they were trails.

WB: They were so hard to get

DS: Okay, and you made those before we found this quarry, right.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Okay, now when we were talking earlier, why do you think, what do you think, you told me you had a vision of what happened to Jacob. What would you think this man in your vision was thinking. Did he plan this or what.

WB: I think that he planned it a lot.

DS: Did he know Jacob, do you think, before.

WB: This is very puzzling. In my mind, when I'm saying, which is very, very strange, I say that yeah, he knew Jacob and the family before.

DS: Why, where do you think, why would he want to do this then, Bill. You know, just relate to me what you told me earlier.

WB:

DS: What was that.

WB: That people, some people, excuse the term, some people use children.

DS: Okay.

WB: To rid themselves maybe of guilt or something or getting back at somebody or getting back at their wife or something like that. They'll use children and I don't know. I think they, something else happens when they do.

DS: What happens, Bill.

WB: I think mentally, they just go, mentally they can't stop themselves. I don't know. I just, you read in the papers about this Bundy and other

people and it goes on and on.

DS: Bill, do you think that this man just couldn't stop himself.

WB: I don't think he could stop himself. And if it happens again, he won't be able to stop himself.

DS: No, he won't, will he.

WB: No, he'll kill another child.

DS: How can we prevent that Bill. How can I prevent that.

WB: Get the guy. I don't know. I wish you could find the man or get the man.

DS: Okay, Bill, you think he knew the Wetterling boy. Do you think he knew Jacob personally, he knew him.

WB: Well, I think he knew all three boys.

DS: Where do you think he first

B: But he didn't know them by name, he knew them by sight because, now please forgive me, I'm talking just logically now.

DS: Yeah. Yeah.

WB: If one says, well why did the man ask them they're names. Well, he must have known them by sight but not by name.

DS: Okay.

WB: But I think that he did follow them down and I think that he must have been at that store waiting for the boys to come out

DS: How did he know the boys would be at the store do you think Bill.

WB: Because, he could have followed them.

DS: Do you think he followed them from their house.

WB: Not from their house maybe, but close by possibly.

DS: He could have seen them going to the store, do you think, or what.

WB: Like you would say, and searching, and thinking things over, sure. There's no problem. I went out there with you today and there's so many wooded area, that you could just park someplace and see the children going to that store. It's the only store from what I hear down in that area.

DS: Okay. So what do you think this man did then after he saw them at the

Tom Thumb store, what would he do. How would he know.

WB: Sir, the only thing I can tell is he knew that they would have to be heading home on the same road.

DS: Why would he confront them at that location do you think.

WB: The way it looked today, when you took me over there, there was one house and it looked like it was a good football field away from that Y there, across

DS: Where the boy was taken.

WB: Yes sir. And I can just picture myself back when I was a child, my goodness gracious, somebody come up with a bee-bee gun pointed at ya, and you're going to get spanked.

DS: Okay. Do you think that, do you think this man had a gun or do you think the boys just thought he did or what.

WB: No, I think he really did.

DS: Why would he, why would he, you told me, he was wearing something, right.

WB: I kept saying, a woman's stocking over some type of man's head and I'd say and or I think if I was Jacob and I see this here little tiny pistol.

DS: Is it a automatic or is it a revolver where you open the cylinder and have to put the shells in.

WB: Sorry, don't know that. It's got a round, see in the middle, you know.

DS: Okay, a revolver right.

WB: Yeah. And the barrel was very, very short.

DS: Okay, what, what caliber do you think it would have been that you see.

WB: I think it was a high caliber

DS: What do you think the man was

WB: Because the hole, it, when I show this scene in my prayers, the hole was this big.

DS: You're looking as big as your little finger, right.

WB: Not like a 22.

DS: Okay, so why does he do this to the, what is the, why does he, when there's three boys there, why not wait for one, just one boy coming by.

WB: He must have been awfully desperate to relieve something mentally that was going on in his head. He must have been awful desperate because anybody could have come down that road, at any time.

DS: How does, why do you, what do you see about him taking Jacob over the other boys. Why would he do that, do you think.

WB: Because Jacob is larger.

DS: Why does he want a larger boy.

WB:

DS:

WB:

DS: Okay. Do you think he, did he, do you think he touched the other boys at all or anything. Would he have touched the boys.

WB: I don't, I don't see that. I didn't, all I saw that he was close to them. I was praying and all I saw and I, was that he was close to them and pulling the gun.

DS: And he took Jacob you said because Jacob was the biggest.

WB: And that was it. But

DS: But, how would he get, what do you see him doing then with Jacob. Does he say anything to the other boys.

WB: I, I didn't see too much. Most of it after that, I'm just more like speaking on logically things, okay.

DS: But he's there with them, what do you see him saying to the boys, or anything.

WB: I see him speaking very angrily.

DS: Why is he angry.

WB: I don't know.

DS: But he's angry.

WB: He's very angry. Very angry and I don't know why.

DS: Is he mad at the boys do you think.

WB: I don't know sir.

DS: What reasons could a man be that angry.

WB: Gosh darn if I know. There's so many reasons a man could be angry.

DS: What could be one or two or them.

WB: Gosh. Maybe the man is married and he has a heck of a hard time with, maybe they took his farm away from him. And maybe he lost everything so he wants to take it out on somebody. I don't know. Even in my job which is much less as far as security is concerned than you do, you really have to get into it. And I'm speaking to you now on this microphone as, I've given what I feel.

DS: Okay.

WB: But I see people come in to work and

DS: Angry.

WB: Just angry as hell,

DS: Bill,

B: because and I can't understand why the anger.

DS: Okay, Bill, you think that, you know, you said earlier when we were talking in the car that you think this man kept Jacob alive.

WB: Yeah, I remember saying that to you and I still think so.

DS: Why did he keep him alive.

WB: So he could use him over and over.

DS: For sex.

WB: Yes sir.

DS: Where do you think he did this at.

WB: I don't know.

DS: Do you think it was that house you described.

WB: Possibly, yeah. I don't know.

DS: And then you indicated that he, Jacob got hurt eventually. Why would the man, why wont' the man just let him go. What would have happened do you think.

WB: What would happen.

DS: Would Jacob know the man possibly and tell on him or what.

WB: This is a possibility.

DS: When you were talking earlier in the car, you mentioned something about why you thought this man might have, this might have happened.

WB: Well, I said Jacob and the other boys might know the man. The man might know Dr. Wetterling and his family. But he might not know them by name. Who knows, maybe he is a patient of Dr. Wetterling's.

DS: So what happens to the man that he does something different with Jacob. You indicated you thought he might have kept Jacob for a day or so or

WB: Yeah.

DS: And then what happened to Jacob in this vision and thoughts you had.

WB: And then I had, and then I had this strongest feeling. The first 4, 5 days, you can ask my son. I had the strongest feeling, I kept coming home at night asking Adam, did anything new come on the TV and they said, he said, no Dad, no. And then I would pray and I would start crying and I would, and when I cried it was like a bursting of strong tears just pouring out of me for Jacob.

DS: Could you

WB: But now I don't feel those tears.

DS: Why.

WB: Because I think that his poor little body is dead. His spirit is free, but the body is dead.

DS: What do you think this man did with him.

WB: I think he did the quickest thing possible that he could do, get rid of the body, just like anybody else would.

DS: How do you think he,

WB: Not anybody else, but this man

DS: How would he have hurt the boy, or what do you think he did to hurt the boy.

WB: He didn't carry that gun for nothing. I think he, Jacob, poor Jacob, if he is ever found, it will be proven I think, I'm just feeling that Jacob was beaten very bad.

DS: With what.

WB: With the pistol. And I think that you'll find that he was shot more than once.

DS: Do you think his clothes were with him or do you think he was

WB: I don't think so. I think he separated the clothes from the body.

DS: Okay, what do you think he might have done with the clothes.

WB: I told you that they're buried in a hole, but I don't know where that.

DS: Would it be in a house, or out in the woods.

WB: I did mention to you that I had a strong feeling that it's in a house in a basement.

DS: Okay. What do you think the man

WB: Of what basement or what house, I don't know.

DS: What do you think the man did then with the body.

WB: That's where the quarry comes in at.

DS: Was Jacob. How did he keep Jacob then in the house in your vision or in your thoughts about it. How did he keep him from getting away. Was Jacob

WB: I think he had him tied up.

DS: How.

WB: By some strong rope.

DS: Okay, you drew a diagram for me of what you saw and it shows, I'll date this one too, okay. I'll put 11/7/89, let's see, okay, and I'll put my initials here. This is a body you drew, right.

WB: Yeah.

DS: And the hands are where.

WB: Are in the back and he was tied, the hands were tied from the back and the feet were tied around the ankles.

DS: Okay, and it says 4 or 5 shots. You think he was shot, right.

WB: Yes.

DS: And then you've got a rope to a, what is this.

WB: Like a rock, a square rock.

DS: Okay, and where did that rock, do you think, come from.

WB: At the quarry.

DS: Okay, I'm gonna, could you put your initials there then.

WB: Sure.

DS: So you think that was a rock this guy would have got from the quarry.

WB: I think so.

DS: And how does he get Jacob down to the quarry, can he drive right to it do you think in your or

WB: I don't see this man as a weakling. I don't see him with illnesses or anything else that is going to hurt him. I see him as a (inaudible) man but, and strong.

DS: Strong. He think a man, you mentioned I think that you thought that maybe, how, well what is Jacob's size.

WB: Jacob is just a, I, I, I don't know, but all I know from when I saw Jacob, Jacob was always lanky. You know, leg thinnish.

S: Okay.

WB: And but yet wiry, you know, he was strong, but lanky. And even the pictures that

DS: Did you say, did you mention he was athletic or something.

WB: Yeah. Even when he was a boy, the times that I used to go over to their home, he would come in and jump up on my lap and call me Uncle Billy.

DS: Okay.

WB: And that made me happy. And the other kids did too.

DS: Did you see this man then kill Jacob then right.

WB: Yeah.

DS: And you said took his body and threw him in the quarry. That's where you think Jacob is, in that quarry, don't ya.

WB: I'm glad you used the word think, because I've been going through a lot of spiritual things about this whole situation too, and I had prayed so hard to God that it never happened to Adam, and then I wished it never happened and I pray it would have never happened to Jacob or any child.

S: You think that Jacob's dead, don't ya.

WB: Yeah. I do.

DS: That quarry bothers you, doesn't it Bill.

WB: It bothers me.

DS: You think we might find him there, don't ya.

WB: Very, very possible.

DS: Do you

WB: I'm sorry.

DS: How do you feel about, what do you think this man feels about this when he sees Jerry Wetterling and Patty on TV and those kids. Do you think he feels like telling them the truth or anything.

WB: No.

DS: Why not.

WB: I don't know what to think of it. I'm sitting here trying to push myself over to see, God forbid, to feel what he would feel. Why he's doing it.

DS: Why would he just

WB: And I don't know if it's a game a contest with him, or if he is so psychotic and that he has to have that every once in awhile

DS: Do you think that he's hurt other boys. Do you see if, do you think in your mind if he's killed any people or boys.

WB: I had thought that and you know I mentioned that to my son Adam. I said, the way I put it to Adam was, Adam, I hope he gets caught before he hurts other children.

DS: He will hurt other children, won't he Bill.

WB: More than anything else, he probably will.

DS: Do you think that, when he sees the Wetterlings on there, that that bothers him, Bill. Does it bother the stress they're, why wouldn't it though.

WB: May I please ask you a question.

DS: Yes.

B: How much reward was put up.

DS: $100,000.00 or more.

WB: Close, $25,000.

DS: Right.

WB: Not even a whimper or an answer to that. So it doesn't make a difference to him.

DS: Money is not, but that was for

WB: and feelings of other people.

DS: But that was for Jacob's safe return.

WB: That's true.

DS: And if Jacob wasn't alive, but he, he didn't do this for mopey, did he.

WB: He didn't do it for money and he didn't do it for the Wetterlings, and he didn't do it for anything except for himself.

DS: For sex with a little boy

WB: I look back and I see that this is what was, if I

S: It happened to you, right.

WB: Well, I tell ya, I don't know what would have happened to me. I look back at that.

DS: Do you think that, what do you think should happen to this man.

WB: I told you before and I have to tell you again, I wish I could say with my religious viewpoint as a Bahai. I can't judge this man.

DS: Do you think he should turn himself in, so he doesn't hurt someone else.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Do you think he will.

WB: But I don't think he will.

DS: Why.

WB: Because he enjoys what he is doing.

DS: Why does he enjoy it though. Do you think he does that all the time. Do you think at times it bothers him.

B: Possibly. I don't know.

DS: What do, Bill, this man looks up in his mind and he tries to sleep at night and he sees Jacob's little body limp or something, what do you think that does to him. How can, he doesn't enjoy that. He must be in

hell, he must be in living misery, don't you think.

WB: You know, you get to know a lot of people and the psychology of people and I went to college and you have to take psychology classes.

DS: I know it. But this thoughts, he must see this little boy in his mind constantly and wish, God, why did I do it.

WB: But there are some people that are so sick and (inaudible) I still remember our professor talking to us that it doesn't bother me. And this is what scares me is that this man is gone too. Sure he takes it out on children now, but what will happen, is he starts taking it out on older girls.

DS: Could he do that do you think.

WB: I think so.

DS: Do you think he has in the past.

WB: I don't know sir.

DS: Do you think he will go after a girl next time or a boy.

WB: Sir, I don't know.

DS: What do you think we should do about this Bill.

WB: Catch him as quick as you can.

DS: What do you think, he'll ever, sometime it will have to be part of his decision won't it. Do what's right eventually.

WB: He'll never do what's right sir.

DS: Why.

WB: Because he's a sick person.

DS: What, is he afraid of something.

WB: I don't know.

DS: Do you think he has feelings Bill.

WB: Ah, from my own learning in college, yeah, they say that even sick people have fears. But I, I, I don't know.

S: Bill, now this guy, I mean he knows the Wetterlings we all believe, but how does he deal with seeing them day after day but not. He knows what happened to the boy but they don't. They'll never know unless somehow he helps. Do you think that at a certain point, he just say, hey, I've done wrong, but I must tell.

WB: No sir. He won't do that.

DS: Why.

WB: Well, you read all these cases and that have happened, this guy Bundy and then this other guy, and other guy and other guy

DS: Do you think this man's similar to Bundy.

WB: And not one of them have turned themselves in .

DS: That's true. Do you think this man will get caught.

DS: Testing 1, 2, 3, test complete. Testing 1, 2, 3, testing, test complete. This is side, another, second tape, the first side. Interview with Bill, William Brown, at the Stearns County Law Enforcement Center on November 7, 1989. The tape was only off to switch tapes. Bill, did I ask any questions when this was off.

WB: No. Uh uh.

DS: Bill, you don't think this man will be caught unless he wants to be caught.

WB: That's my feeling.

DS: What about, what do you think he feels towards, you know, Jacob's body being in a place like that.

WB: Sir, I can't say what he is thinking or not thinking right now.

DS: What do you see

WB: Maybe he doesn't think of anything.

DS: What, what do you think of Jacob, now what do you see. Right now, if you closed your eyes and were to think of Jacob, how do you picture him. Is he

WB: I feel, I feel nothing. I feel a blankness.

DS: What does that mean.

WB: As I said before, that's why my crying for Jacob to be kept alive was so intense because I was crying for that and then 4 or 5 days went by and then just like that I stopped crying.

S: You feel that Jacob's dead now.

WB: And I feel that the body of Jacob is dead.

DS: Do you feel that he suffered when this was going on.

WB: Very much.

DS: Was he scared.

WB: I'd be scared.

DS: Do you think, do you think that it bothers the man that took him, ever did it bother the man that took him.

WB: Sir, I couldn't answer you that question.

DS: Do you think that if we find, Bill, if we find Jacob's body in the gravel pit, do you think that will help us lead to the man who did it.

WB: I don't know what you could find down in the bottom that would help do that.

DS: Why.

WB: I mean, what can you find. Can you find fingerprints, can you find something to help lead you to the person.

DS: In this day and age, we can, with all this DNA and stuff and everything.

WB: Then I say, very possibly I sure hope it will.

DS: Because with DNA and that new, I don't know if you even heard of that new technique. I won't go into it all.

WB: No.

DS: We can identify an individual person through a lot of ways now and if a person's deceased, evidence is great. Better that the body would be in cold water than in a place where it would decompose, okay.

WB: Then I would say

DS: That cold water would preserve evidence.

WB: I hope he's, he's found.

DS: And we do, you know, we do have some people have seen some people in the area of the Tom Thumb store and we haven't revealed that to the press.

WB: I didn't know that.

DS: Well, we've got some witnesses and we haven't revealed it yet. We got some descriptions.

WB: Then I'll keep quiet about that because

DS: Okay, we're waiting to see what else we can come up with obviously.

WB: I just want him caught soon.

DS: Okay, well we feel we're getting closer Bill.

WB: I feel, I just want him caught.

DS: We're gonna get close, we're gonna catch him Bill.

WB: You know, all these small towns around here, I wish I could get on a microphone right now and tell them, can you see what one little boy did for you. He brought you all together.

DS: Bill, Bill, do you know what happened to Jacob.

WB: Worship God and be together.

DS: Bill, do you know what happened to Jacob.

WB: No.

DS: Were you ever there when it happened.

B: No.

DS: Did you hurt him.

WB: No.

DS: Bill, are you the man we're looking for.

WB: No. No sir, I'm not.

DS: You didn't do this.

WB: I love children more than anything else. I have very few things in my life.

DS: Bill, if you had, if you had gone out of your mind or something for a while, would you tell me. What if you woke up later and you realized, oh my God, what have I done. What would you do. Would you tell me.

WB: Can I tell you something.

DS: Yes.

WB: You ask Dr. Larry, Dr. Larry would be the first one I would tell.

S: Who's he.

WB: He is the director. he is my personal doctor at the Central Medical Clinic.

DS: Bill, we spent a lot of time together, and so you're telling me, you're saying, Denny, I didn't harm Jacob.

WB: No, I did not.

DS: Okay. You're willing to help us further.

WB: I'll help you in any way I can. If you want to take my blood or whatever it is.

DS: Would you consent to letting me have a photograph and fingerprints so I can eliminate you.

WB: Of course you can.

DS: Because we have, we have some witnesses who saw a man in the area of the Tom Thumb store, two of them and I'd like to get a picture so I can eliminate you.

WB: Of course you can.

DS: And fingerprints, okay.

B: Sure. No problem.

DS: What all are you being treated for Bill.

WB: High blood pressure.

DS: Okay, what do you take for that.

WB: I take cortozoine, which works directly on the heart and then I take endaural which is a, it lowers the blood pressure. And then I take.

DS: You've got a patch there right on your arm.

WB: Yeah.

DS: What is that.

WB: Show you.

DS: What's in that patch then.

WB: There's a little square there that has nitroglycerine in it.

DS: Okay. What other medicines do you take.

B: And I take Zanzax.

DS: Okay.

WB: But I don't go out of my head. I just had

DS: Okay, what's this panic stuff. Explain that to me.

WB: I don't know what that is. The doctors are now feeling that it's not a mental disorder at all, that it's a physical disorder with that gland that shoots adrenaline

DS: Okay, what, what happens to you when that happens.

WB: It shoots out more adrenaline the whole thing, the whole gland empties out.

DS: Okay.

WB: And you just want to feel like you, you're gonna panic.

DS: Is that the same doc that's treated you for that.

WB: Yes, he's been giving me the medication for that, but the doctor that found it is the doctor up here at the Mental Health Center.

DS: Okay. What, why were you up there.

B: See, they because couldn't find out what was going on, so what that, well it's nerves and it's just

DS: What doctor was that then.

WB: I can't remember his name.

DS: Okay. How many years ago were you in there for that Bill.

WB: I wasn't in there for years. In fact he saw me about 4 times and he says this Zanzax is doing the trick he said.

DS: You weren't in the mental hospital then or the mental place were ya. I mean everyone needs to go once in a while.

WB: You mean a roomer.

DS: Yeah.

WB: No.

DS: How about here, the Crisis Center.

WB: Yeah, I was up here.

DS: Which, were is up here Bill.

WB: St. Cloud Hospital.

DS: VA or what.

WB: No, the St. Cloud Hospital.

DS: Okay. For mental health.

WB: Mental Health for this here panic.

DS: Okay. What set that off then.

WB: They couldn't find out.

DS: The divorce or anything.

WB: They said it could have been the divorce, it could have been anything, but sometimes they cannot locate the reason why.

DS: Bill, were you here when those Healings got, do you remember when the Healings were murdered. Did you ever hear about that, where a woman or two daughters and a son where shot.

WB: Oh no, no.

DS: Did you ever about that older woman that was murdered.

WB: No sir.

DS: Okay. Bill, what I'd like to do is, you know, maybe if we could get your photographs and your fingerprints and eliminate you, okay. And you're willing to talk to that other fellow.

WB: Yes I am.

DS: Okay, why don't we get that done because, you know, okay.

WB: Yeah, because I, I want to get to work tonight.

DS: Okay, let's do that and then we won't have to bother you again hopefully.

WB: Okay, sir.

DS: Okay, thank you. That will be all on this statement. It's ending at approximately 7:25 p.m. here, right.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Okay, any problems you've had with us, do you feel okay.

WB: Sir, I've been treated just, just like a normal human being.

DS: Have you been on any medication today that would cause you hallucinate or not to know your judgment.

WB: No, I have no hallucinations whatsoever with my medication.

DS: You know who I am right.

WB: Yeah.

DS: Who am I.

WB: You're the detective in charge of questioning me here.

DS: Okay, we'll end this statement then. Thank you Bill.

INTERVIEW WITH JASON SCHULTE
Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=Special Agent Peter Cunningham
Q2=Special Agent Dee Levine
A=Jason Schulte

Q: Good afternoon, it's, uh, Tuesday the 7th of November. It's about 2:41 and one second in the afternoon by my digital watch. And, um, I'm Dr. John Rhetts and we're in the interview room at the Wayzata Police Station. And with me is, uh, Jason Schulte and Special Agent Pete Cunningham and Special Agent Dee Levine. You guys are in the background right?

Q1: Yes.

Q2: Go ahead.

Q: And, um, if I understand, um, what we're doing here this afternoon, we're gonna try to follow up and see if, uh, with a- with some slightly different ideas we might be able to recover, um, some information from you that you possibly saw and possibly remembered, but if...

((0:01:00))

Q: ...we try to get it a slightly different way it might work better. And we're gonna use hypnosis just like we did the other night when we were here. Does anybody remember what date that was?

A: It was a Saturday (unintelligible).

Q: Oh, okay.

A: The 29th.

Q: Yeah, yeah.

Q1: The 30th.

Q: It was the 30th. Yeah. Or the 31st?

A: 30th.

Q: 30th, yeah. Okay, um, and, um, so we're gonna use hypnosis just like we did before, but we don't have to go through all of that preamble that we did. All of that introduction that we did last time. We can sort of get right down to it.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: But we need to ask you to sign the same, uh, form that you did last time giving us permission to do this. So if I can I'll read it out loud so that the machine gets it. Okay? And it says, um, I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis and be interviewed under hypnosis...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...in order to assist the FBI with an investigation it is conducting. I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview and this videotape maybe used for any lawful purpose (unintelligible) with the investigation or any subsequent action based on the investigation. Dr. John Rhetts, licensed consulting psychologist has explained the procedures to be used during the course of this hypnosis session and any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction. The purposes - the purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my memory in recalling the following. I think what we wrote down last time is what I saw on, uh, County 22, um, in Renville County on the morning of...

((0:03:00))

Q: ...October 30, 1989. Right?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, and today is 7 - I'll sign once. I want you to read that and see if it says what I just read to make sure that you're comfortable with it and you can sign it (unintelligible) an extra copy.

A: I got a new job now too.

Q: Oh, you do?

Q1: Congratulations.

Q: Making more money.

Q1: That's good.

Q: Good.

Q1: Great.

Q: Dee and I were both saying (unintelligible).

((0:04:00))

A: Here?

Q: Yeah, yeah. You're the one that's (unintelligible). What were you going to say?

Q1: I was just gonna say that the Dee and I were talking a little while ago (unintelligible), uh, we were both saying that it just seemed like such a bum deal that, uh, you got fired from your job. I'm delighted to hear you got another one.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q1: Oh, different company?

A: No.

Q1: Same company?

A So, it's the same.

Q1: Oh, okay.

A: It's just the whole store.

Q: But, uh, better pay?

A: Yeah.

Q: Good.

A: (Unintelligible). I can walk - I can walk to work too.

Q: That's probably your biggest saving.

A: Yeah.

Q1: That'd be my biggest saving.

A: Yeah.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

A: Yeah.

((0:05:00))

Q1: Good for you. There you go.

Q: Okay, now this is the idea behind this. When, um, Pete called me late last week he told me that, um, you have some real artistic ability and as you said when I think we were here the night of October 30th you mentioned your dad was an artist.

A: Yeah.

Q: Is he - is he an artist by - is that how he makes his living or he just does it for fun?

A: Does it for fun.

Q: Okay.

A: He shows his art.

Q: Uh-huh. Well, and when Pete told me that, um, you had - you've had had some difficulty with how you learn things in school along the way?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And yet you have some artistic ability. This is the idea that I got in my mind. I was thinking that maybe since you drove along - as I recall you drove. You - you turned your car around after that car left the roadside...

((0:06:00))

Q: ...with a man and a boy in it as you saw. And you caught up to 'em where you were approximately. I think you told me you were about three car lengths behind them.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And you were lookin' at the car and you were looking at the license plate among other things, right? Trying to remember I think you said. Is that correct?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. But yet you couldn't remember now, you couldn't remember it that night and you even had trouble remembering it by the time you got where. Home was it?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: So what I was wondering is maybe if we used hypnosis and instead of trying to remember what the license plate is, if you can draw whatever you saw on the back of the car. Because maybe with whatever your learning difficulty is it's harder for you to remember things in letters and numbers and it might be easier for you to remember in shapes. Cause I remember when you drew the little sketch of the back of the car, you were real...

((0:07:00))

Q: ...it was real clear that you were drawing something and you were trying to make things be the same shape that you saw and so it just seemed to me that it might be worth trying to focus again on the back of that car and to draw the shapes that you see rather than trying to remember well what was the license plate? And maybe we'll turn up a big nothin' and maybe we'll turn up something. Okay, is that - is the idea that I'm describing does that make sense to you? Okay?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay.

A: Makes sense.

Q: Anything else that has come up in any of the stuff you've been doing that you know anything after you know an hour later you said, "Oh my goodness I wish we'd tried to ask about whatever under hypnosis?"

A: No.

Q: Was there anything else...

A: No, I can't think of anything.

Q: Okay.

((0:08:00))

A: (Unintelligible). No we're good.

Q: Okay, well then let's give it a whirl.

Q1: If you're comfortable.

A: I'm comfortable.

Q1: Okay.

Q: So let's do it. Okay, now, um, last time you asked me if you could have your eyes open and we did that. When you were picturing the car under hypnosis, you had your eyes open? I was curious about something. Was there some particular reason that you wanted to have your eyes open? Did you think it would help or you'd be uncomfortable with your eyes closed or what was the idea there?

A: I felt, um, I feel uncomfortable when...

Q: Okay. I'd like to see maybe if we can do it two ways this afternoon. And if it makes you uncomfortable and you really - it just doesn't feel right for goodness sake tell me. We're not here to trying to make everybody uncomfortable this afternoon. Let's try it at the beginning with...

((0:09:00))

Q: ...your eyes open or closed as you choose and then we'll also try it the other way afterwards. The only reason I say that is sometimes in my experience with people in hypnosis, sometimes when a person can open their eyes under hypnosis it's like they're looking at the image of it sort of out here like in an (abysmal) movie screen or something. And it helps them. In which case that's great. And then other times when they have their eyes open and then they see the cinder blocks and the kitchen cabinets and the stuff on the wall it becomes kind of a distraction. So as long as we're here, I thought we might try it both ways just to see if it makes any difference. I mean if the time that we're trying with your eyes closed you do feel uncomfortable just tell me and I'll stop there.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay. Well, let's do it the same kind of way we did before.

Q1: Let me get the microphone under your arm here so...

((0:10:00))

Q1: ...it doesn't...

Q: And as I recall you're a lefty right?

A: Mm-hm. Correct.

Q: Left, right. And, um, so I want you to one look up towards your eyebrows, and all the way up to the top of your head, two holding your eyes up. Close your eyes slowly. Three, take a deep breath. Exhale. Let your eyes relax. I'd like you to concentrate on the welcome pleasant feeling of floating. A light floating feeling as if you could float, Jason, right up off the chair or right down through the chair. I'd like you to just focus your mind on this idea of floating as if your whole body is lighter and lighter. And as if you just kind of soared with yourself totally involved in the idea of floating...

((0:11:00))

Q: And as you concentrate on this feeling of floating, your right hand and arm began to feel lighter and lighter. And you can just let them float upwards bending at the elbow. And your mind is focused for the moment on the idea of floating. It's as if for the next few minutes there's nothing else you need to be thinking about except floating. Just a live, pleasant feeling and then right where you are just slowly, easily get into the flow. And you might just let yourself get completely comfortably into the mood...

((0:12:00))

Q: ...and feeling of floating. Quiet, peaceful, nothing else going on that you and me could be thinking about or focusing on at all. (Unintelligible) more and more floating and comfortable, pleasant feeling. (Unintelligible). Floating, okay. And if you can completely, completely (unintelligible) of floating.

((0:13:00))

Q: It's as if for the next few moments there's nothing else going on in the world. You're just comfortably and safely, pleasantly. And as you continue to float I'd like you to listen to an idea that I have, and if you're comfortable with it I'd like you to go along with me and imagine. And let your mind focus on the ideas that I'm going to describe for you next- next. I'd like you to imagine

that, um, you can see in front of your eye, sort of in your mind's eye the face of a clock. It could be like a wrist watch, it could be like a big grandfather...

((0:14:00))

Q: ...clock, could be like a big clock on the side of a building (unintelligible). And as you look at that clock you can see that is has a very unusual thing about it. The hands on the clock can turn forward to show time going by and the hands on that clock can also turn backwards. To show that time is going backwards. And as you watch that clock the hands being to turn backward and time starts to go backwards. And you can go backwards...

((0:15:00))

Q: ...in time. The minutes add up to hours. The hours add up to days. And time is now going backwards and you're going backwards in time. It's no longer the 7th of November. It's now Monday the 6th. And now go back (unintelligible). The fourth, the third of November, the second of November, the first of November. The 31st of October. Now the 30th of October. Going back to the day. (Unintelligible) and right now. To mid-afternoon, to noon time. Back to the (unintelligible). Back to...

((0:16:00))

Q: ...between 9:00, 10:00. Getting towards between 10:00 and 11:00 in the morning on October 30th. And you can picture in your mind where you were going. You were driving on County 22. It's after 10 o'clock. Before 11:00? You're driving on County 22. And as you're driving along you notice a car out in front of you on the other side of the road and it seemed (unintelligible) and it stopped. And as you often do...

((0:17:00))

Q: ...you decide to stop and see if anybody needs help. And you slow down - and you put on your brakes and you slide. Kind of across from that car. And you're looking at the car. You're looking at the people. And as you look at them you can see the (unintelligible). You can look at the car. You see (unintelligible) and as you're sort of getting ready to get out of your car you are sort of about halfway out of your car. The man that you see has pushed a boy and the...

((0:18:00))

Q: ...boy's gotten into the car. The man comes around the front of the car and gets in and he puts the dark car in gear and takes off. Going down the road in

the direction that you just came from. And you decide to follow him. And so you get yourself back - all the way back inside your car. You close your door and put your car in gear and you turn the wheels and make a u turn to go across the same direction the car is going. Back in the direction you came from. Then you get halfway through turning around and you have to back up and turn the rest of the way and then you get on down the road. And as...

((0:19:00))

Q: ...you're driving along you're looking not only at the road to make sure it's (unintelligible) but you're looking ahead. You're looking at that car. You're looking at the back end of it and you could see a roof on it, and you could see the back window and you could see some outlines - people or seats or rear view mirrors that are up on the front windshield and things like that. And you can see how - and you can see the area of tail lights and license plates and any writing that's on the back of the car identifying its make or its model. And in fact you're looking at that license plate. And you're looking at it because you've in your own mind decided you want to remember what it is and so...

((0:20:00))

Q: ...you're looking at it. And you can see the shape of the license plate and you look at the shape of the markings on the license plate. And you look at it because in your mind you want to remember what's the license plate. And you stare at it as you are driving behind them, as you're catching up to them, as you're driving along some distance behind them.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: You run and do the other things that you look at long before you - did your other work and you look at it in the dark because you've in your own mind decided you want to remember. And as you look at that license plate you can see the shapes of the design of the things...

((0:21:00))

Q: ...that are on that license plate. In a moment I'm gonna ask you to draw a picture. A careful picture or a sloppy picture. It doesn't have to be an artistic picture, but I'd like you to come and look at the shapes that you see. Try to draw a picture of what you see on the license plate. Shapes. You think you could do that for me? And see in your mind anything on that license plate?

((0:22:00))

Dispatch: (Unintelligible). Yeah he is.

Q: (Unintelligible). You're looking at it. (Unintelligible). I appreciate that. This is hard. And you know it wasn't (unintelligible)? I don't want you to leave out something just to fill in a blank.

((0:23:00))

Q: Go through your mind entirely and correctly to say (unintelligible). It's okay. Do that. And if you - if you find you're thinking in shapes makes it easier than thinking in terms of letters or number that's fine. If you're thinking in terms of numbers that's fine too.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: I don't remember.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: If it's not there, it's not there.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: We're trying to see - we're trying to add to the junk. But if it's not in there...

((0:24:00))

Q: ...it's not in there. And (unintelligible) keep your eyes closed for a second and as you sit in on this session you can imagine (unintelligible). If you can just hold there for one second. (Unintelligible) if there is anything that a person...

A: It's, um, a certain (unintelligible) slower (unintelligible).

Q: As you think about that license plate, as you try to, you know, look in your mind at what you've got how sure are you about the plate?

((0:25:00))

Q: Really sure, pretty sure?

A: I'm wondering.

Q: So you remember that road clearly?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: You feel sure. And it's enough right at - it's not - if this is the license plate it's on this side.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Not this side.

A: Okay.

Q: It's right hand side and I think you said you don't know where on that side.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: Mm-mm.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: Can you see anything else on that license plate? Are there any (unintelligible).

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Do you see the word Minnesota anywhere?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Where do you see it?

((0:26:00))

A: Ten Thousand Lakes.

Q: Mm-hm. Where is that? You're talking...

A: The top part.

Q: Okay? And so it says Ten Thousand Lakes, Minnesota or...

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: I realize that. Do - do you see it or you kind of recall it?

A: It - I remember it from....

Q: Mm-hm, mm-hm, okay. Do you see anything else on that license plate?

A: The tabs and the little sticker.

Q: Where are they?

A: On the bottom corner.

Q: Oh, so on this corner and this corner?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay.

A: I know I had - I'm pretty sure that I had not (unintelligible).

Q: Can you see any colors on the plate when you think about it?

((0:27:00))

A: Mm-hm. (Unintelligible).

Q: (Unintelligible). Do you see (unintelligible)?

A: Lettering.

Q: There's some lettering?

A: Mm-hm. The lettering...

Q: Okay.

A: White, white.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: A tab.

Q: Mm-hm. Do you see colors?

A: Black. (Unintelligible).

Q: Do you see any other writings (unintelligible)?

((0:28:00))

Q: Okay, is there any kind of a - of a trim or...

A: No (unintelligible) I don't know if it has a trim or not. I saw black. (Unintelligible). I can't remember. I'm tryin' to think first.

((0:29:00))

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Hm?

A: I'm tryin' to think (unintelligible).

Q: Mm-hm. Let me ask you a question do you have someone's phone number - like somebody gives you a phone number and they give it to you just in words and not written down? Do you have any tricks you use to try to remember that (unintelligible)?

A: I usually remember numbers (unintelligible).

Q: Okay, uh, same with letters if someone gives you their name or they're selling something (unintelligible).

A: Mm, yeah.

Q: I was just wondering have you ever used any tricks, you know, to help you remember things.

((0:30:00))

Q: It's up to you (unintelligible). Or that's not something (unintelligible).

A: (Unintelligible). Moments before you were talking about Jason and (unintelligible) ID or a cigarette (unintelligible).

Q: You said that you were all (unintelligible).

((0:31:00))

A: Is that real clear to you? Or is there - is it - is it definite in your mind that there was an 8 on the license plate?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And when you were talking about 98 or a 9 were you - were you talking about Tad (unintelligible) down here or were you wondering if there was a 9?

A: Yeah. Well it must have been (unintelligible) Tad.

Q: (Unintelligible) did you see (unintelligible) when you looked back at that car you had your eyes open, do you see anything that says something about a deal. For example, was there anything around...

((0:32:00))

Q: ...the license plate that said (unintelligible) since come back in in a place that started looking (unintelligible). When you pictured the license plate has your mind come up with a blank or a (unintelligible) or, um, when you're trying.

A: Yes.

Q: Eyes opened or eyes closed when you're trying to remember what you would have seen (unintelligible) become a blank or blur (unintelligible).

((0:33:00))

Man: (Unintelligible).

A: A blur.

Q: (Unintelligible) when you see the (unintelligible) does that (unintelligible) come out a blur. Like it gets clear or does it stand out on its own?

A: It stands out on its own.

((0:34:00))

Q: (Unintelligible). You know how you have a television set where the knobs that you can turn that make a color look awful or good or sharp or the pictures looks crummy. This is just - this is just an idea I have. You imagine trying to tune - you see that license plate to try to make any of that blurry that you see (unintelligible) simply has a little and knobs (unintelligible) can you imagine...

((0:35:00))

Q: ...tuning that picture? Now (unintelligible) and imagine (unintelligible). This time hands start to turn forward, at times starts to go forward, you go forward in time. It's long enough to (unintelligible) because the minutes start adding hours and hours and days...

((0:36:00))

Q: ...number one, number two, number three, number four, number five, number six and number seven. (Unintelligible). I'm going to count backwards to three, you can follow along. Three get ready, two roll your eyes up. And your eyes are fluttering (unintelligible). Were you able to feel a light floating feeling in the beginning of that?

A: Yeah.

Q: Pretty - pretty definite?

A: Yeah.

Q: And your hand flows up all by itself. Definitely comfortable.

((0:37:00))

A: It kind of hurts after a while.

Q: Yes, actually.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: And when - when I, um, describe that clock face, you are going back in time - did um, did anything (unintelligible) could you picture it happening? And then we got back to that, um, Tuesday morning the 30th.

A: Sure.

Q: Monday the 30th and, um, were you able to picture the car as you were driving along the road? Could you see a car and the people? That kind of thing?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So that was fairly clear to you. The license plate just - it doesn't come.

A: I just don't feel that it hit me.

Q: Yeah. Not much we can do about that. We can't make things up that aren't there.

((0:38:00))

A: Well, um, I can't think of anything else to ask at this point. How do ya - do you feel comfortable about what we did today?

A: Yeah, I feel really - I really appreciate - I keep trying (unintelligible).

Q: It's real clear you're trying.

A: It's like everybody asking me (unintelligible) (Hector) I can't remember last night.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

A: Right.

Q: Well I can tell you that it sure seems to me you're doing your very hardest to do the best you can to be helpful and that's all anybody can ask.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: I appreciate your being willing to come in and try me. So I think it's, uh, my watch says 3:19.

((0:39:00))

Q: And, uh, I guess we'll sign off.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.
Signed_____

HYPNOTIC INTERVIEW WITH JASON SCHULTIES

Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=Man
A=Jason Schulties

Q: Today is the 7th of November and it's about 2:41 and one second in the afternoon on my digital watch. And, um, I'm Dr. John Rhetts, and we're in the, (Unintelligible) interview room at the (unintelligible) police station, and with me is,uh, Jason Schulties and Special Agent Cunningham, Special Agent Buellie. You guys can hear in the background; right?

Q1: Yes. We're both here.

Q: Okay. Good. And, um, if I understand, um, what we're doing here this afternoon, we're going to try follow up and see if, uh, with a - some slightly different ideas we might be able to recover, um, some of the information from you that you possibly saw and possibly remembered, but if we try to get it a slightly different way, it might help (unintelligible). And we're going to use hypnosis just like we did the other night...

((0:01:00))

Q: ... when we were here. Does anybody remember what day?

Man: It was exactly what you (unintelligible).

Q: Oh, okay. Very good.

Man: (Unintelligible).

Man: It's the 30th.

Q: It's the 30th.

Man: That's right.

Q: Yeah, or the 31st.

Man: 30th.

Q: 30th, yeah. Um, and, um, so we're going to use hypnosis just like we did before. I mean, we don't have to go through all that preamble that we did, all that - that introduction we did (unintelligible). But we need to ask you to sign the same form that you did last time to give us permission to do this. So, if I can, I'll read it out loud so that the machine gets it. Okay. And it says, um, "I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis and be interviewed under hypnosis in order to assist the FBI with an investigation it is...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...conducting. I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview and that this videotaping is active investigation or subsequent action based on the investigation. Dr. John Rhetts, a licensed consulting psychologist has explained the procedures to (unintelligible) through the course of this hypnosis session, and any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction for purposes - the purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my memory in recalling the following. I think what we wrote down last time is what I saw on, um, (unintelligible) 22, um, in Renville County on the morning of November 30 of 1989...

((0:03:00))

Q: ...(unintelligible)." And today is the 7th (unintelligible) sign this, a motion to read that and see if says what I've just read to make sure if you're comfortable with it, you can sign it. You can sign it. (Unintelligible).

Man: Got a new job now too.

Q: Oh, you do?

Q1: Oh, congratulations.

Q: Making more money.

Q1: That's good, good, great.

Q: (Dee) and I were both saying, you're a little (unintelligible) you?

Man: Yup, yeah.

Q: You're the one that's the (unintelligible), do you need...

((0:04:00))

Man: Now, what were you going to say?

Q: I was just going to say when (Dee) and I were talking a little while ago (unintelligible), uh, through most (unintelligible) it just seemed like such a bum deal that, uh, you got fired from your job.

Man: (Unintelligible).

Q: (Unintelligible) it's the same with all (unintelligible). It's just the whole (unintelligible). But, uh, better pay.

Man: Yeah.

Q: Good. (Unintelligible)? That's probably your biggest saving. Yeah.

Man: It'd be my biggest saving.

Q: Yeah.

Man: 'Cause I don't have anything to do this weekend. Got - what the (unintelligible) that you went through.

Q: Yeah.

Man: Well, good for you.

Q: Okay. Now, this is the idea...

((0:05:00))

Q: ...that I had planned out. (Pete) called me late last week. He told me that, um, he would have some real artistic ability, and, as you said, timing we're here the night of October 30th, you had mentioned your dad was an artist. Was - was he an artist by (unintelligible)?

A: That was (unintelligible).

Q: Uh-huh. And when you (Pete) me that, um, you had - you've had some difficulty with how you learned things in school along the way, and yet you have some artistic ability. This is the idea that I got in my mind. I was thinking that maybe since you drove along, as I recall, you drove - you turned your car around after that car left the roadside, and then went in as you saw it.

And you caught up to him where you were approximately, I think you told me...

((0:06:00))

Q: ...the other evening about three car lengths behind him. And you were looking at the car and you were looking at the license plate among other things; right? Trying to remember I think you said; is that correct?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. But yet you couldn't remember it now. You couldn't remember it that night, and you even had trouble remembering it by the time you got where? Home, was it? So, what I was wondering is maybe if we used hypnosis and instead of trying to remember what the license plate is, if you can recall whatever you saw of the car, because maybe with whatever your learning difficulty - you'll remember things in letters and numbers, it might be easier for you to remember them in shapes, because I remember when you drew the little sketch on the back of the car, you were real - you was real clear that you were drawing something and you were trying to make things be the same shape that you saw. And so it just seemed to me that it might be worth...

((0:07:00))

Q: ...trying to focus again on that - that car and to draw the shapes that you see rather than trying to remember, well, what was the license number? And maybe we'll turn up a big nothing or maybe we'll turn up something. So, is the idea that I'm describing; does that make sense to you?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Anything else that has come up, you know, maybe in all the stuff you've been doing that, you know anything after an hour later, you said, oh, my goodness, I wish we'd tried to ask about whatever under hypnosis was (unintelligible).

A: You know, I cannot think of anything.

Man: Okay, I'm fine.

Q: Well, then let's give it a whirl here.

Man: (Unintelligible).

((0:08:00))

Q: Okay. Now, um, last time you asked me if you could have your eyes open, and we did that when you were picturing the car up here since you had your eyes open. I was curious about something. Was there some particular reason that you wanted to have your eyes open? Did you think it would help or you'd be uncomfortable with your eyes closed here? What was the idea there?

A: I felt, um, you know, uncomfortable.

Q: Okay. I'd like to see maybe if we can do it two ways this afternoon. And if it makes you uncomfortable, and you really - it just doesn't feel right, then for goodness sake, tell me. We're not here trying to make you uncomfortable this afternoon. Let's try it at the beginning with your eyes open or closed as you choose, and then we'll also try it the other way afterwards. The only reason I say that is sometimes...

((0:09:00))

Q: ...in my experience with people, hypnosis sometimes, when a person can open their eyes up, it's like they're looking at the image of it sort of out here like in this over screen or something and it helps them, in which case, that's great. And then other times when they have their eyes open, and then they see the center of the cabinets and stuff on the wall, it becomes kind of a distraction. So, as long as we're here, I thought we might try it both ways just to see if it makes any difference. If the time that we're trying with your eyes closed, you do feel uncomfortable, just tell me and I'll stop that.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay. Let's do it the same kind of way we did before. Let me, uh, get the microphone. (Unintelligible) or something. As I recall, you're a lefty, right?

A: Mm-hm. Correct.

Q: And, um, so I want you to go ahead and look up towards your eyebrows...

((0:10:00))

Q: ...and all the way up to the top of your head to hold your eyes up and close your eyes slowly. On three, take a deep breath. Exhale, and let your eyes relax and concentrate and a welcoming, pleasant feeling. A light floating feeling as if you could float, Jason, right up off the chair or right down through the chair. I'd like you to just focus on this idea of floating as if your whole body is getting lighter and lighter as if you just (unintelligible) totally

involved of floating. And as you concentrate on this feeling of floating, your right hand and arm will get lighter and lighter...

((0:11:00))

Q: ...And you can just let them float upwards and (unintelligible). And your mind is just focused for the moment on that feeling of floating. Makes it (unintelligible) for the next (unintelligible). There's nothing else that need to be focusing on except for floating. Just rely on (unintelligible) and slowly, easy. And you can just let yourself breathe in comfortably and breath in comfortably. There's nothing else going on you need to be thinking about or focusing on at all...

((0:12:00))

Q: ...(unintelligible) more and more focused. Floating (unintelligible) completely, completely absorbed by this light feeling of floating. It's as if for the next few weeks, there's nothing (unintelligible)...

((0:13:00))

Q: ...there is (unintelligible) the same. As you continue to float, I'd like you to focus on an idea that I have and if you're comfortable, I'd like you to follow along with me and imagine and let your mind focus on the ideas where I'm going to describe for you (unintelligible). Then come - come see in front of your eyes sort of your mind's eye. You're facing a clock. Could be my wristwatch. It could be my great grandfather clock. It could be like any clock on the side of the road. And as you look at that clock, you can see the hands on it are pretty unusual (unintelligible)...

((0:14:00))

Q: ...the hands on a clock can turn forward to show time going by, and the hands on that clock can also turn backwards to show that time is going backwards. As you watch that clock, the hands if you could turn the hands, the time starts to move backwards. (Unintelligible) the powers that help today. Time is now going backwards, and you're (unintelligible). It's not all the (unintelligible). It's not (unintelligible)...

((0:15:00))

Q: ...the first one, the 31st of October, now the 30th of October, going back to (unintelligible) back to the 29th and heading towards 2010. On October 30th, and (unintelligible)...

((0:16:00))

Q: ...where you were going? You were driving (Unintelligible) county, county too. It's happened before. Before that, you're driving on county (unintelligible). You're just driving along and you notice a car out in front of you on the other side of the road facing (unintelligible) and stopped. And as you often do, you decide to stop and see if anybody needs help. And you slow down and you put on your brake, and you stop kind of across from that car...

((0:17:00))

Q: ...and you're looking at the car. You're looking at a male. And as you look at him, you have C (unintelligible). You see what he looks at. And as you're sort of getting (unintelligible) to get out of your car, you're starting without him. You're half way out of your car, and then what you see is pushed, a boy, and the boys gotten into the car. And a man comes around the front of the car and gets in. He puts the darn car in (unintelligible) and takes off going down the road in the direction that you just came by...

((0:18:00))

Q: ...and you decide to follow. And so you get yourself back, all the way back inside your car and you close your door. And you put your (unintelligible), and you turn your wheels to make a U-turn to go the same direction as the car was going, back in the direction you came. And you get half way through turning around, and you have to back up and turn the rest of the way and then we get all down the road. And you're looking not only for the road to make sure he's still on it, but you're looking ahead. You're looking at that car. You're looking at the back of the car, and you can see the (unintelligible) lines. You can see the back of the (unintelligible). And you can see some hump lines...

((0:19:00))

Q: ...and the old brush seats, so rearview mirrors that are on the front windshield and things like that, and you can see the trunk. And you see the area with taillights and license plates. Any writing that's on the back of the car that outlines any (unintelligible). And the fact, you're looking at that license plate, and you're looking at it, because you've, in your own mind, decided you want to remember what it is. So, you're looking at it. And you can see the shape of the license plate number. And you look at the shape of the markings on the license plate. And you look at it, because...

((0:20:00))

Q: ...of your (unintelligible), license plate. And you stare at it as you are driving behind it, as you're catching up to them, as you're driving along some distance behind them and one of the other things that you look at while looking at it, and did look at the license plate. When you look at it, in part because you've, in your own mind, decided you want to remember. And as you look at that license plate, you can see the shapes of the design of the things that are on that license plate. And on that plate, I'm going to ask you to draw a picture. A careful picture or a sloppy picture...

((0:21:00))

Q: ...it doesn't have to be an artistic picture. I'd like you to from what looked at the shapes that you see, try to draw a picture of what you see from the license plate shapes. Do you think you can do that for me? Do you see or write anything on that license plate? (Unintelligible) looking at or anybody can be...

((0:22:00))

Q: ...turn (unintelligible). I appreciate that, 'cause this is (unintelligible). Okay. Now, I want you to make something just to fill in the blank. And you can remember it's entirely for the sake of (unintelligible) do that. And if you - you can find that picking in shapes makes it any easier, (unintelligible) that's fine...

((0:23:00))

Q: ...if looking in terms of one or two (unintelligible), that's fine too. (Unintelligible) we won't (unintelligible) something...

((0:24:00))

Q: ...keep your eyes for a second. And do you (unintelligible). And float here for one second. (Unintelligible) that license plate, and try to, you know, to locate a line. How sure are you about the (unintelligible)? Real, real sure? Pretty sure?

A: I remember real clear.

Q: So you remember that real clear? Make me feel real sure. And it's in the right-hand inside. This is the license plate. It's on this side.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Not this side..

A: Hm-hm.

Q: Okay. It's the right-hand side. And I think you said...

((0:25:00))

Q: ...you don't know where on that side. Can you see anything else on that license plate?

((0:26:00))

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Can you see the word that (unintelligible)? Where is that? Okay. And so it says ten thousand lights went solo?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: I- I realize that. But do you see it blurry or kind of recall it?

A: If I remember it's (unintelligible).

Q: Do you see anything else on that license plate? Okay. And so this (unintelligible)?

A: I'm pretty sure that I did not (unintelligible).

Q: Did you see any colors on the plate?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: What's blue and what's white?

A: Some lettering in the plate.

Q: Did you see any letting on the plate?

A: The lettering that's blue and grey and white.

Q: Okay.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Yeah. Same color?

((0:27:00))

A: Black. That's all I know. I know - I know there's another color (unintelligible).

Q: Do you see any other writing at all? Is there any kind of a - of a trim or (unintelligible)?

A: I don't know if it had any trim or not. Um, for some it was kind of black.

Q: Okay.

((0:28:00))

A: I'm trying to think of the first - I'm trying to think of it, but it's hard.

Q: Let me ask you a question. Are you (unintelligible) some phone number. If somebody gives you a phone number, and they give it to you just in words and, do have you have the skills to try to remember that if you really need to?

A: Usually, I can remember if (unintelligible).

((0:29:00))

Q: Uh, same with letters if someone gives you the name or a spelling or someone (unintelligible); can you remember that pretty easy? I was just wondering if you ever used a trick (unintelligible). That sounds like (unintelligible).

A: Yeah.

((0:30:00))

Q: You said that you recall there being a man. Okay. Is that real clear to you? Or is there - is it - is it definite in your eye that there was an 8 in the license plate number? And - and you were talking about 91 or a 9. You were talking about that and sticker down here or were you wondering if that was a 9 here?

A: Well, it must have been on the tag.

((0:31:00))

Q: Did you see when you looked back at that car, did you see anything that's says (unintelligible)? For example, was there anything around the license plate that

said anything (unintelligible) or a sticker or a back end (unintelligible)? And you (unintelligible) license plate...

((0:32:00))

Q: ...does your mind come up with a blank or - or a, um, when you're trying with your eyes open or your eyes closed, are you trying to remember what you will see (unintelligible)?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Now, how you know you didn't see the 8 that (unintelligible)...

((0:33:00))

Q: ...does that 8 come out blurred like it gets clear or is it just sort of stand out on its own?

A: Sort of comes out.

Q: Do you know how on a television set that's little knobs that you can turn to make the color look awful or good, that sharpens the picture a little (unintelligible). This is just - this can justify the (unintelligible) can you imagine trying to...

((0:34:00))

Q: ...to see that license plate to try to make any of that blur that you see any sharper? (Unintelligible) control knobs (unintelligible). Imagine too that picture is (unintelligible). Now, picture this, imagine a (unintelligible) this...

((0:35:00))

Q: ...time he has to start the truck forward and (unintelligible) starts to go forward. You go forward and, uh, 'cause the (unintelligible) are adding out (unintelligible) and it's now October 31st. Three, four, five six and number seven. (Unintelligible) in the afternoon. (Unintelligible) to get on backwards. Three, two, one. Three, get ready, two, rolls your eyes up, one and you're (unintelligible)...

((0:36:00))

Q: ...were you able to feel a light floating feeling in the beginning of that?

A: Yeah.

Q: Pretty - pretty definite?

A: Yeah.

Q: And your hand floated up all by itself. Did that feel comfortable?

A: Yeah, it kind of hurts up here after a little bit.

Q: Yes, after a little.

A: Probably hold it - yeah, anybody.

Man: Pulls up.

Q: And when - when I, um, described that clock fix when you were going back in time, did, um, did that make sense to you?

A: What could you picture...

Q: Could you picture that happening? And then we got back to that Tuesday morning, the 30th - or Monday the 30th, and, um, we knew what the picture of the car as you were driving along the road, could you see a car with people? So that was fairly quick too...

((0:37:00))

Q: ...license plate just - it doesn't come?

A: I just don't even feel like it hit me.

Q: Not much we can do about that. We can't pick things up that aren't there. Well, um, I can't think of anything else to ask at this point. How you - you feel comfortable about what we did today?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. I really appreciated you.

A: I keep trying to think of another name for (unintelligible).

Q: Well, it's real clear you trying.

Man: That's all you hear everybody ask when you start asking. Do you remember the license plate? It's hard to ...

ICR# 89006407

STATEMENT OF:	GARY JOE HEDLUND
DATE OF BIRTH:	2/19/1955
ADDRESS:	224 WEST EAGLE LAKE STREET MAPLE GROVE, MN
PHONE:	789-6743
STATEMENT TAKEN BY:	INVESTIGATOR NIGHTENGALE
TAKEN ON:	11/8/1989
TRANSCRIBED ON/BY:	MARCH 23, 2017 1309 HOURS/DLT

Q This is Investigator Nightengale, interviewing Gary Hedlund about his whereabouts on October 22, 1989. There are no witnesses to the interview. The case number is I've forgotten that, I'll put that in later. What-tell me your full name.
A Gary Joe Hedlund

Q Joe is JOE?
A Yeah, correct

Q And your birth date Gary?
A 2/19 dash 55

Q And where are you currently living?
A Oh it's, I'm currently staying with friends, so not any current address. Ah, I will be moving into an address of 224 West Eagle Lake Street, in Maple Grove.

Q And do you have a phone number that you can be reached at?
A Ah, there's no ph-I have no phone but it's, they can use my parents phone, I usually, cuz they I stop over there a couple times a week which is 789-6743

Q Okay, very good, and how old are you now?
A 34

Q Are you aware of who I am and the nature of this investigation?
A Ah, yeah

Q Okay are you aware that I've advised you here, under no false pretenses, that you're not under arrest, you're free to leave here at any time and that ah, ah-you don't have to answer any questions by me.
A Yes

Q Okay, um, and with that in mind will you answer some questions I have for you about your whereabouts on October 22, 1989?
A Yes

Q Okay, Gary, we were talking before about ah, ah, the reasons why I believe I've been instructed to contact you about this incident, um, you work for a delivery service is that correct?
A Yes

Q What company is that?
A Ah-currently Road Runner

Q And do you h-know the phone number for them?
A 644-8444

Q Okay, you seem to have a good recollection of where you were and what you were doing on, for most part of ah, Sunday, October 22, we've already gone through that, ah, would you just start and tell me in your own words, ah, where you were on, ah, the morning hours of October 22?
A The morning hours I had ah, left for Maple Lanes Bowling Center,

Q And where is that?
A That's in ah, Fridley, off Highway 65

Q Okay
A And ah-that was about 9:30 in the morning that I left and got there about quarter to ten, and I started at 10 o'clock and they-they have a match game ah, tournament.

Q Okay and how long were you there for?
A Oh they bowled ah, 'til noon.

Q And who would have known
A (inaudible)

Q Who would have known you there?
A All the bowlers, I ah, I bowl there ah

Q Can you give me some of their names?
A Ah, Bob or Tom Kasper, Tom, Tom-Tom Kasper's the one that runs the tournament.

Q CASPER?
A Or KASPER?

Q KASPER, okay, anyone else?
A Um, ah-like I said before, I'm terrible with names.

Q Okay,
A Ah,

Q That's alright,

A But he's a, he was a manger (inaudible)

Q What
A And Jeff Klapp was there too.

Q What time did you leave there?
A At around 12

Q And where did you go then?
A From there I went to eat at Hardees, they have-they have a Sunday special so,

Q Which Hardees would that have been?
A That'd a been in the ah, Columbia Heights/Fridley border line on ah, Central and 53rd.

Q And where did you go after that?
A After I ate over there, I went over to my girlfriend's house

Q And what's her name?
A (Inaudible) Gayle Christianson

Q GAYLE?
A Yeah

Q And her address is?
A Is 2910 Thomas Avenue, 2722 Thomas Avenue North,

Q 2722 Thomas, and her phone number?
A 521-1070

Q And about what time would that have been?
A That would have been around 2:30.

Q And where did you go next?
A From there I went over to Kevin Hirdler's house.

Q HIRDLER?
A Yeah

Q And his address?
A Is ah, 1617 6th Street Northeast,

Q Telephone?
A 781-8467

Q And what did you do there?
A I watched the tail end of the Vikings game and then ah, after that I watched another game that was the 3 to 6 o'clock game, which got over about 6:30.

Q Okay, who else was at Kevin's house?
A Ah, his ah, girlfriend Lori Nelson, ah, her sons Ray and Mike.

Q Okay, and
A And the dogs

Q What time would you have left there?
A We left, we went out to, went out to pick up Hardees, some more roast beef sandwiches at about ah, between 6:30 and 7.

Q Okay, and who
A And we brought the food back

Q Okay
A And I left there probably around 7:30 after eating.

Q 7:30 PM you would have left
A Yeah

Q Kevin's?
A Mm-mmm

Q And where would you have gone then?
A Went over to ah, South Minneapolis to ah, a lady I know, ah name Irene Garble, and she lives on 4th Avenue South, 2714

Q And did you speak with her?
A No, there was no one home there.

Q Okay, where did you go next?
A Then after that ah, I went up to Randy George's house, which is on Main Street

Q Address?
A 8-816 Main Street Northeast.

Q He's a friend of yours?
A Yeah

Q And what did you do there?
A Watched a movie that they rented out from SA

Q And who would have been present at that house?
A It would have been his wife and ah, their, his kids and

Q What are their names?
A Jessica and ah, I can't, Lita or something like that.

Q Okay,
A And ah, also ah, Randy, no, can't think of his other name.

Q You, before you gave me Kenny
A Kenny, yeah,

Q And he's a friend of Randy's?
A He's a friend of Randy's,

Q He was there? okay, how long did you stay at ah, Randy ah, George's house?
A I stayed there ah, I watched the news and so after the news was over shortly after that I left around, somewhere around 11 then I went over to my parents' to wash my clothes for the following day, for work.

Q Okay, did you see your parents then?
A No, they were here in bed.

Q Did they know you were at, in the house?
A Yeah

Q Okay,
A Cuz they heard me.

Q Okay, that basically wraps up your day then of
A Yeah

Q (inaudible) you would have been mostly in the Minneapolis area, southeast, and northeast areas?
A Yes

Q Um, okay, is there anything else that you can tell me of what you would have been doing that day?
A Um, no, I can't think of anything else.

Q Did you have a background, ah, where you would have been institutionalized at any place in Minnesota?
A Ah, I had a, I had one second degree criminal sexual conduct.

Q And how

A That would have (inaudible)

Q How long ago was that?
A That would have been seven years ago.

Q And where would you have been, did you get some type of sentence for this?
A Yeah I went, I ah, went to ah, Stillwater. I went for ah, probation for five years and I went through treatment for ah, a couple years and did not complete it.

Q Where would that have been?
A (inaudible) ah, Alpha House.

Q Where is that?
A 2712 Freemont Avenue South

Q Okay and how long ago was that?
A That would have been, ah, 1984 through, or '83 in a part 'til about '85

Q Okay, do you have a probation officer, anybody like that right now?
A No, I completed ah, Stillwater and the program at 180 degrees and completed parole.

Q Okay so that's been done now for a little while?
A About three years.

Q Do you remember any of the names of the, ah, caseworkers concerning that probation officer? Or
A Carol, ah Gary Johnson would have been the, my parole officer.

Q Who is he with?
A Minneapolis, Hennepin.

Q Hennepin County? Okay, okay, other than that, that's about all, I understand you own a vehicle, ah, what type is that?
A I own a, a '88 Chevy Cavalier car, white,

Q License number 458DWG?
A Yeah

Q And what other vehicle?
A A '76 Chevy van.

Q What color is that?
A It's a tan color with ah, white strip on the side.

Q Okay and the license plate of that is LGT493, correct?

A Yeah

Q How long have you owned the, ah, van?
A Ah, one year

Q How long have you owned the other white car?
A About five months

Q Are these the only two vehicles you own?
A No

Q What else do you
A (inaudible) ones, ah, I, there, they're not in use, they're up north, they've been put away for a couple years, so I haven't used ah, there's one I have used in the last year, it's, (inaudible) FGF767 license plate number, Dodge Aries 83, and that'd be the only one I've used in the past year or so.

Q Okay,
A The other ones I bought, they're about ready for the junkyard.

Q Okay, well this will conclude the statement taken from Gary Hedlund, the time ending is 1822 hours on 11/8/89.

[END OF RECORDING]

RECORDING
Q=Phil Jordan

Q: The following impressions are psychic impressions being done by psychic Phil Jordan, 133 Main Street, Candor, New York. Before I get into the impressions, I would like to share a few thoughts on the use of psychics in investigation. Whether it's a missing person, and more especially a missing child, everyone wants to help out. There will be people from all walks of life who will try to utilize gifts that they have been given…

((0:01:00))

…in regards to the search. Some of these people will have appropriate backgrounds, intellects, and gifts to back up their abilities. However, many people will volunteer to search, merely to be a part of the action. As I have worked probably 300 missing persons cases, and well over 350 homicide cases through investigative techniques, I have found that first and foremost, that the investigation must still remain in the hands of the investigating agency, and although it may be a tedious factor for the general public to understand, there are processes in investigation that must be followed.

((0:02:00))

Information that may be derived from such unique abilities as psychic phenomenon or hypnotic techniques, should be considered to enhance the investigation, but should in now way take over the investigation. However, if the avenues are followed and they're objectively viewed, I think it's possible, and I know that it is possible because it has worked in many cases that I have worked, that such investigative techniques can work. I myself have been through municipal police training academy, and have worked mainly with the Tioga County Sheriff's Department, and was deputized in 1976 with the Tioga County Sheriff's Department.

((0:03:00))

I have been attached with them as a special deputy and been used in countless investigations throughout the country, and have had some successes in regards to missing persons and abduction cases. However, for the investigating

agencies, they also must realize that anyone that has a dream or a hunch or a psychic impression will probably be contacting them, and it will be very difficult for them, because sometimes these people, um, you will want to listen to them but it'll be very difficult because their - their stories may become rather bizarre.

((0:04:00))

My process of working is merely to take a picture of the missing persons and sit in the solitude of my office or home, and tell what impressions I perceive about what happened to the individual missing. I hope that these impressions will be of help. I do not claim 100% accuracy - at the most, psychics could probably be 70% accurate. But perhaps it'll be one significant clue that could be helpful. I've been given some stories on the missing person of Jacob Wetterling, and have briefly read them, but I'm going to tell you what impressions I receive, because it's better for me not to know a great deal about the case until later on. I am sending this tape...

((0:05:00))

...through affiliates in my area who have family in the St. Joseph area. I've entrusted it to them to entrust it to the proper agencies, merely because of the nature of the case, and the time elements involved, further subsequent reports, I would like to be handled if possible through an investigating agency. Myself having worked as an officer, feel that the communications can be a bit more positive in regards to - to my work. First of all, I am undecided as to...

((0:06:00))

...the health of Jacob Wetterling. Generally I receive an impression whether or not the abducted person or the missing person is deceased. In this case I do not receive such impression. I do feel there's a strong possibility that Jacob Wetterling is still alive as of this report. I do feel that he has been abducted by somebody who was not acquainted with the family, and was not connected to the family. I do feel, in regards to his abduction, that there were two individuals involved, and I do believe in the two profiles that I have, the two artists' sketches, that the older gentleman is an extremely accurate profile of a man who may be connected to the disappearance of Jacob Wetterling.

((0:07:00))

...I do feel also, in regards to the case of his disappearance, that the van type vehicle in actuality was used, but that there may be another vehicle that was also used by the individual, which would be an older model, blue-colored pickup truck. It appears there may have been painting on the door of the

driver's side of the truck, or that there was damage that has been body painted over with primer gray type color. It appears there may not be a tailgate on the back of that truck. It does appear to me that after his abduction...

((0:08:00))

...Jacob Wetterling was taken to a place, which appears to be in a rural country setting, though not far from where he was abducted; I would say between seven and 12 miles from the abduction site. It does appear to me, in the course of the investigation, that this farm would be rather secluded, where within one and a half to two miles, there would be a four-lane arterial, there would be an exit. You would travel down a County or country Macadam road, two-lane, that appears that the number 9 and 7 will be involved in that.

((0:09:00))

It appears you would turn off of that onto another Macadam road and go only approximately one-half to three-quarters of a mile, and you would turn right again down a dirt road, just past a bridge - you would turn right down this dirt road, and a tree-lined drive going back into a farm, where on the other side of the trees would be a brook or a creek, that would be a - a small tributary type stream, would flow along as it would go down this, um, dirt road. It appears to me that there would be a field to the left, which I believe during season would be a crop field.

((0:10:00))

I feel trees and the creek to the right. I feel that this road would continue down through the field or past the edge of the field, where there would be a house. There would be several out-buildings in sad need of repair. It appears there would be a weathervane that would be sort of by itself, and just a weather wheel that would change directions with the wind. It appears there would be an old wooden type manure spreader that has not been moved in some time, a tool shed that would be more of a lean-to nature, and two separate small barns, and there may be...

((0:11:00))

...one or two farm type animals affiliated with this property. It does appear to me that an elderly woman may have lived at that property or still be living at that property, and that one of the males may somehow be connected to that property. I also see two school buses, which may not be in use, that would have where the lettering of the name of the school, under the windows, would be - would be a long black line, as if it was painted out before these buses were transferred, and they may be also associated with this property or in

close proximity to where Jacob Wetterling would be. It appears that three dogs, German shepherd type dogs...

((0:12:00))

...would be housed at this property. Two of them would be chained, and one of them would run free. The one that would run free would be a collie-shepherd mix. I feel there may also be in one far corner of this property, a lean-to sawmill type facility that was used perhaps more for making fence posts or something of that nature, and not have been in use in some time. It does appear to me that the van may be housed in such property - at least frequently visits such property. I do feel that one of the individuals involved in the abduction will be a person who has worked as a maintenance person...

((0:13:00))

...around an educational facility, but not necessarily a public school. It appears that it may be more around a development center or a special children's center, or something where younger people with special needs would be housed, as well as educated. I do feel that the individuals involved in the crime itself will have a connection to the Seattle, Washington area, and may periodically make trips to Seattle, Washington. One thing that came through very strong was the name Hollis, I spell H-O-L-L-I-S.

((0:14:00))

It does appear to me that that name will be significant as a name connected in some capacity. I am not sure if it is with the abduction or whether it is with the - in an address associated with the abduction, but I do feel that that somehow will prove to be significant, and feel that I would check police records, welfare rolls, and anything in which a person with that name may receive public assistance, or been involved in public documentation in some capacity.

((0:15:00))

I do also feel, in the course of the investigation, that there will be a discovery of an article of Jacob's clothing, which may be intentionally left by the individual who did the abduction. I do feel in regards to this, that the person who is involved with the abduction will be a person who is going to be mentally imbalanced, to the point that they have lost a child in some capacity...

((0:16:00))

...early in their life; perhaps a brother or sister or somebody close to them, and that their anger and vengeance is helping to carry out this criminal activity. I do feel also in the course of the investigation, that a place that looks like a white-sided diner, that will have the name Katie's, K-A-T-I-E, apostrophe S, may in some way have been visited or been significant in the course of the individual's path on the day the abduction did take place. I also would be curious to know, in the course...

((0:17:00))

...of investigation, if there is a rest area connected with a four-lane highway within the area of the abduction, in which a second vehicle may have been left, and somebody may have connected or seen activity that they could not connect to the abduction itself. I also feel, in the course of the investigation, an address that would have the word Cherry, C-H-E-R-R-Y, or Cherry Hill Lane, will in some way be significant or relevant. Those are the impressions that I am receiving to this point. I hope that they will be of help in the course...

((0:18:00))

...of the investigation. If there are further questions that I may be of help, and an investigator would like to contact me, don't hesitate to contact my office at 607-659-3225. I wish you well, and will remember Jacob Wetterling in my prayers, for his safe return, and the resolve of this case. I remain cordially yours, Phil Jordan.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

PS-6-0230-01

5/2607

TYPE OF REPORT

- ☐ Initial Report
- ☐ Investigation Report
- ☐ Criminal Information
- ☐ Case Closure
- ☐ Other_____

MINNESOTA DEPARTMENT OF PUBLIC SAFETY

BUREAU OF CRIMINAL APPREHENSION

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

Approved by_____

Bureau Number	Offense Category		MN Offense Code
89000535	Kidnapping		
County of Occurrence	**Date and Time of Incident**	**Submitted by**	**Section**
Stearns	11/11/89	S/A Everett Doolittle	R
Case Title			**Date and Time of Activity**
Jacob Wetterling Abduction			11/11/89

The following is a taped interview with Peggy Kay Johnson, D.O.B. 12/11/51. Interview was on Saturday, November 11, 1989, at approximately 11:15 hours by Deputys Steinberg and Jabobs in vehicle parked by 11 N. 6th Ave., St. Cloud.

DP 1: Can you think back three weeks ago. Do you remember if you might have been out with him that night?

PJ: Drove back into town.

DP 1: Drove back into town from where?

J: Well sometimes he doesn't give me any possible reasons why he turns into town he just happens to have my phone number?

DP 1: How long have you known him.

PJ: A year.

DP 1: Where did you meet him at?

PJ: Over at Crossroads, shopping center.

DP 1: How does he treat you? Is he mean to you or anything?

PJ: No.

DP 1: Are you afraid of him at all?

PJ: No. He has strange quirks about his own - whatever he does.

DP 1: What do you mean by "strange quirks"?.

PJ: Alot of strange quirks.

DP 1: For instance.

: Um, just for his personality, he'll want to take off and do something like that and then he'll be gone in a flash.

DP 1: Oh yeah? What kind of things does he want to do?

2026

S/268

P 2: Do you know if he owns any guns or not?

PJ: I don't think so.

DP 2: Have you ever seen any?

PJ: No.

DP 2: Have you ever been out to his house?

PJ: Yeah at one time. Yeah. Thats why I don't think we're still talking about the same guy here.

DP 1: Oh yeah. He lives over towards Crossroads?

PJ: Are we really?

DP 1: ?

PJ: Are we talking about the same guy?

DP 2: We're talking about the same guy. Looks alot like this picture? Not quite so old looking.

PJ: That's him alright. And that's me, that's the one that I would -- is that really -- oh my god -- Don't -- That's him, that's him, that's , over by Waite Park.

DP 1: Have you ever been to St. Joe with him at all? Have you ever been out of town with him anywhere?

PJ: No. No. He lost his - oh my god -- is that him?

DP 1: Well its the

PJ: Thats the picture, now that you, if thats the one in the paper, thats him and he has like, he wears his hair real short on top. And I was out with him and then he wears sunglasses and dresses up in a suit and a tie.

DP: Oh yeah. Does he wear black clothes alot?

PJ: Oh yeah, you better believe it and black sunglasses too. Don't tell me I'm getting

DP: No you're not in any trouble or anything.

PJ: No I'm not worried about it but jees.

DP: We're just trying to find out where he was on that Sunday night so we can more or less eliminate him.

: You say that day of the evening

DP 1: It would have been a Sunday three weeks ago now almost. It will be three weeks ago this coming Sunday.

PJ: Close to Halloween.

7027

5/269

DP 2: A week before that.

PJ: A week before?

DP 1: Do you remember if you were with him at all

PJ: I can't pinpoint a date I'll just be honest about that.

DP 2: Did you go to any Halloween parties with him?

PJ: No. But I know where he lives.

DP 2: So do we.

DP 1: Yeah we were over talking to him already.

PJ: Is that why you got my telephone number?

DP 2: Yeah we got it from , he gave us your phone number.

PJ: Why, what did say then?

DP 2: Well just that you're his girlfriend, kind of.

PJ: Well, yeah.

DP 1: Ok, kind of a friend.

PJ: I am. Let's just say if he gets depressed, ok, he'll pick up the phone and call me and I'll go out with him dancing.

DP 2: What does he get depressed about?

PJ: Oh everything. He doesn"t

DP 2: Has he ever said anything to you about fooling around with any kids or anything? Has he ever been in trouble for that do you know.

PJ: I think so.

DP 1: Do you recall at all what he might have said.

PJ: Something to the fact of, um, I'll do to you what my parents did to me. I'm not saying I was sexually abused but he, he would. But it's like if you went and saw him you know if he was just in a T-shirt or something, in fact he gave me a Minnesota Vikings sweatshirt.

DP 1 Yeah. He can be a real nice guy but then all the sudden he can be a not so nice guy.

PJ: Bang. And all the sudden he'll go dress up in a black suit and black sunglasses and god I don't even want to think that I was even out with this someone. I don't know.

DP 1: There's nothing really saying that he did do anything wrong but we're just trying to determine whether or not or where he was that day, you know. It's very possible he's got nothing to do with it. Very possible.

7078

S/270

PJ: Well what in the heck did he do then to give you my telephone number here.

DP 1: Basically he looks like that picture. So do alot of other people and those people have been talked to and there's more to be talked to. See we're just trying to eliminate him as one of the suspects.

DP 2: Another reason we're talking to you is he gave us your phone number and said you were kind of a girlfriend and maybe, maybe you could help us cause he can't remember what he did on October 22nd either and we thought maybe you could help us maybe you were with him, maybe you talked to him or something else. Maybe you could tell us a little more about his background. What do you know.

PJ: I wasn't with him on October 22nd. In fact I wasn't with him then for a period of three weeks.

DP 1: Was he mad at you or you mad at him?

PJ: We went out, no, I wasn't going, not even going with him exactly. I just wasn't with him.

DP 2: Did he ever go up to Fargo area and work for awhile, lately?

PJ: I don't think so. His first family is close to Fargo, it's Ulen, Minnesota. Never heard of the town before. I know northern Minnesota but I don't know about Ulen.

DP 2: You don't know if he ever went and worked at a suger beet plant lately or not?

PJ: No, he never said anything like that.

DP 2: Has he ever had a phone?

PJ: I don't think so.

DP 2: Never given you a phone number. In the whole time you've known him in a year.

PJ: He doesn't have a phone in that house of his is because he was in trouble with the telephone company at one time. He doesn't want a phone, he doesn't want to be disturbed. He likes his privacy.

DP 1: Does he ever talk to you about his kids, or his former wife or anything like that?

PJ: Yeah, he was married once.

DP 1: And what happened there, has he said anything?

PJ: It shattered him, he had a nervous breakdown.

DP 1: How about his kids, what happened to them.

PJ: He doesn't really talk that much like that about it but he went through a real bad nervous breakdown after his divorce.

DP 1: Did he say why he got divorced or anything?

S/271

PJ: Um, no. But he said that he had a nervous breakdown. And he was in a psychiatric unit for a while cause he couldn't handle the divorce. And he was left shattered. That's what he told me.

DP 1: He doesn't talk much about his kids or anything then.

PJ: No, he doesn't bring them up.

DP 1: Does he ever say anything about any other kids when he sees them, you know, running around playing or anything like that. Like, I wish I could have those for my kids or I wish my kids were with me. Anything like that.

PJ: When he starts talking about kids like that he can be like a real baby and get real emotional. He can just then turn around and just be a super nice guy.

DP 1: Does he seem to be emotional like he gets angry at the kids or

PJ: No, I don't think he's do that.

DP 1: More sad than anything?

PJ: He can have like a big football player, he can be just that type of person but at the same he can turn on you. Now this is only private isn't it?

DP 1: Definitely.

DP 2: You bet.

PJ: Cause obviously is going to probably try to get in touch with me.

DP 1: Yeah, you know anything you say to us will be between us three. We're not going to be discussing things that are discussed.

PJ: But he did say something that one --

Dp 1: What's that?

PJ: Something about the loss of the son. And he said if I had to do it all over again. He said he would never let what happened to the loss of his son.

DP 1: He lost a son at one time?

PJ: Yes.

DP 1: Do you know how he lost the son?

PJ: Not exactly.

DP 2: It was his son though?

PJ: Yes.

DP 2: If he had it all to do over again what would he do?

7030

5/272

PJ: He's find another son and then no one would have to pay for what he went through. So were his words I guess.

DP 1: I take it this loss of his son wasn't from the divorce though was it. It was maybe an accident or something like that?

PJ: I don't think so. I think is was a real bad accident where it happened. But he was shattered.

DP 2: This couldn't have been the friend could it. Has he ever talked to you about a friend that he was hunting with once.

PJ: You mean a hunting accident? He was in Viet Nam.

DP 2: No this was before he want to Viet Nam when he was younger.

DP 1: Could he have been referring to that instead of the son.
PJ: Might have been but I don't think so.

DP 2: What did he say after that, that if he had to do it all over again, he'd find another son?

PJ: Yes.

DP 2: You said something after that and I forgot already can you remember what you said? Something like he wouldn't have to go through what he did.

PJ: I think what I meant is that he wouldn't have to go through it again. He wanted another, if he wanted a son he'd find a way to get another son.

DP 2: Do you know if he owns any property anywhere else? Do you know if he's got a cabin or anything that he goes to?

PJ: Um, just his house and he's got that other part of the cottage that's there.

DP 2: By the house. How about anywhere out of town, maybe back up toward home.

PJ: Yeah. I could probably find that out. Cause I'm supposed to, he wanted to meet me. Now that he's back in St. Cloud.
DP 2: Was he gone for a while?

PJ: Yeah, he was gone for like two or three months and then all of the sudden he shows up. We were out there jogging this morning.

DP 1: Oh yeah.

PJ: Yeah at 7:30.

P 1: When he was gone where did he go when he was gone?

PJ: He jogs.

DP 1: You said he was gone for a long time like what three months or something like that.

5/273

J: Uh huh, three or four.

DP 1: Where was he then.

PJ: He didn't say, but its like he pick up and goes and so then its like he gets my phone number you know cause he knows me and like he like he took me out for a big lobster dinner when he came back into town. So you know.

DP 1: How long have you lived here Peggy?

PJ: Probably not all that long, three weeks, two weeks.

DP 1: Where did you live before that?

PJ: I was over at the Women's house. I was the victim of really bad physical abuse.

DP 1: From you husband or boyfriend.

PJ: Boyfriend.

DP 1: Have they got him locked up?

PJ: Uh huh. He's in Cambridge.

DP 1: He's in Cambridge? Good.

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 2: State Hospital down there?

PJ: I wouln't call it a State Hospital. Isanti County Jail.

DP 1: Good place for him. Right.

DP 2: A little bit different.

PJ: Well that's alright, you know I landed up in the hospital. I had my name written up about me in the paper how I survived and how the police here

DP 1: It's a hell of a way to get you're name in the paper.

PJ: Yeah.

DP 2: When did come back. You said he was gone for a couple months. Do you remember when you talked to him again.

PJ: When he came back into town.

DP 2: Yeah.

DP 2: We know you've been out partying with him this last week.
PJ: Yeah?

DP 2: Yeah, have you seen him before that recently?

7032

S/274

J: Yeah, I've known him from before then, but it's been this last week that he's just all the sudden showed up in town.

DP 2: Have you every gone anywhere with him out of town. Has he ever taken you out of St. Cloud?

PJ: No.

DP 2: No. Do you know where St. Joe is?

PJ: Yeah I know, its right down on 23 on division you keep going straight isn't it.

DP 2: Have you ever been there to St. Joe?

PJ: We drove out there once.

DP 2: How long ago?

DP 1: What do you mean "we", you and ?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 2: How long ago was that.

J: Oh it wasn't even all that long ago.

DP 1: If you had to guess, how long do you think.

PJ: Well lets just say I've been out there with him a few times.

DP 1: Where do you go when you go out there?

PJ: We just drive.

DP 1: Any special parts of town or

PJ: No just like then he'd want to sit there and talk or something.

DP 2: Do you stop somewhere and talk then?

PJ: On the side of the road and talk. And thats about it and then he takes me back here and says well I'm the only reason that I come back.

DP 1: So thats been real recently he's done that?

PJ: Well we didn't do it today.

DP 1: No, no. Within the last couple weeks maybe. Three weeks? Month? Two months.

PJ: Its been within a week.

DP 1: Thats out to St. Joe? Have you ever been to Avon, have you ever been to Avon, do you know where that is?

S/275

PJ: Uh huh. No he's never taken me to Avon. But I have my best girlfriend that lives out there.

DP 1: Have you ever stopped in the Tom Thumb store when you've been out there?

PJ: Drove by it but we never stopped in.

DP 1: How about in Avon, have you ever gone to a, mentioned being in a store in Avon or anything.

PJ: He liked to stop and like you know go into a Tom Thumb store and just like maybe get like a bag of potato chips or whatever and pick up - is what he'd do. But you know this gets me really nervous cause you know he had a nervous breakdown, did it tell you that.

DP 1: Uh huh. He mentioned that.

PJ: He fell apart.

DP 1: Yeah.

DP 2: Do you think that he could be violent?

PJ: He could be sexually violent.

DP 1: He could be sexually violent as far as you're concerned?

PJ: Yeah. But he never hurt me. No. But you know I saw that picture in the St. Cloud paper myself and never put

DP 2: You don't know if he's ever had sex with kids. Has he ever mentioned anything about that.

PJ: Yeah, he does, yeah.
DP 2: He has, he's told you about it.

PJ: Yeah.

DP 1: What has he said about it, any reason why?

PJ: To take out his frustrations and everything. This cannot get back to him.

DP 1: Who's kids, his own? Has he ever mentioned having any sex with his daughters or anything.

PJ: No, but he's showned me pictures that he's got a daughter. But he lost a couple.

DP 2: What kids has he mentioned having sex with to take his frustrations out then.

S/276

PJ: He doesn't exactly pinpoint any names, he's just said what has happened before. Ok, to make a long story short you know I was out at the house and he said oh I don't want to call it rape but basically its like in the heat of the moment in the middle of the night you know it all comes out and then I wanted to leave.

DP 1: Ok but he started talking about having sex with these kids while guys were together then?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 2: What did he say about it.

PJ: Well can be pretty open and then he can be pretty quiet. He just said he felt so sorry.

DP 2: Felt so sorry for what.

PJ: For himself I think is basically what he was trying to say.

DP 2: How does that relate to the children or having sex with the kids?

PJ: I think he felt in growing up his parents, his father somehow did something wrong to him. Let's just say I think, well I know, yeah.

DP 1: What did his father do to him I guess is what we're wondering. Has he told you that.

PJ: Had sex with him.

DP 2: He did, ok.

DP 1: Was his father ever caught for it.

PJ: Nope. And then he, well I'm no psychiatrist or whatever but if you ask me that it would be like different things in his life that he would take it out on. But boy I'm telling you cause we were out last night and I got really mad I said how in the world can you change your identity like that. One minute I'm wearing a viking t-shirt or something then he'll go back there and he goes out there and dresses up in a suit and a tie. He wouldn't be the same person and but yet he wears these black sunglasses.

DP 1: When hge talks about having sex with these kids and stuff what has he told you, you know, is he doing it because of this father?

PJ: Frustration. He doesn't have to tell me anything, he doesn't say that much. But its like a frustration release.

DP 1: Has he said anything about where these kids come from?

PJ: He's married before. I don't know anything about his first wife.

DP 1: Has he mentioned anything about having sex with kids recently?

PJ: No.

5/277

DP 1: So it could possibly be from his first marriage that he's talking about having sex?

PJ: Yeah.

DP 1: Or could it be current things something within the last year or so?

PJ: Yeah. I don't know its like he's, to me he's like a whole different sometime, his own identity. And he can be funny he's gonna talk to. He's gonna talk to me. And the only one he's gonna open up to is me. And I know that for a fact.

DP 1: You said he can be very open at times. When he has been open has he ever talked to you about that. He's talked about having sex with kids.

PJ: Yeah.

Dp 1: Is he mentioning boys or girls.

PJ: Boys. Cause he was abused growing up.

DP 1: How old a boys is he talking about?

PJ: I think he's talking about someone between eight years old. We're not talking seventeen years here we're talking, cause I think he was abused when he was eight years old.

DP 1: Has he ever mentioned anything about this Jacob Wetterling at all recently? I mean hearing anything about it, mention anything about it?

PJ: Well, yeah. We saw the article when we were reading the newspaper and it was in the front page and don't look at that was all he said. And I said for heaven's sakes you know. I mentioned something to the fact of what this poor family must be going through, you know. You read about it and its like knowing or not knowing, you know, and I mentioned something to him I said if you were the parents of that child to the effect of wouldn't you want to know either way?

DP: What did he say.

PJ: He said thats not my concern.

DP 2: Did you find that strange.

PJ: Yeah I suppose a little bit but it was just like you read so much about it in the newspaper it didn't seem to really bother him so much, like it wasn't his concern.

DP 1: Are you afraid of him.

PJ: No. I don't think he'd hurt a woman. I mean when I'm out with him he'll buy me the best lobster dinner when he came back in town and

DP 1: When did he come back, has it been a long time, short time.

5/278

J: He was gone for a long time.

DP 1: But do you remember when he came back?

PJ: I suppose I could look in my calendar book. He called me.

DP 1: How did he know where to find you.

PJ: He's got my phone number he knows where I live.

DP 1: But you said you haven't been living here that long, right about three weeks. How did he know that you were here and your phone number was here.

PJ: Cause through a girlfriend.

DP 1: His girlfriend or your girlfriend.

PJ: My girlfriend.

DP 1: He called her and got the number?

PJ: Uh huh But I do know that his parents are up by wherever, Ulen, Minnesota is what he told me.

DP 1: Are they still alive?

J: I don't know, but if you're going to spell Ulen, Minnesota I suppose its U-L-L-A-N-D, is that it? It's up by Fargo, he went up to Fargo, he's supposed to be a hockey player up there close by Fargo.

DP 1: He was? A hockey player?

PJ: That's what he told me, I wouldn't say hockey, football.

DP 1: He was a football player up there?

PJ: Uh huh. He said that Ulen, Minnesota is between here and there and Fargo like about a ten-minute drive. I've been to Fargo but never heard of the town.

DP 1: The little town of Ulen.

PJ: Yeah I would say U-L-L-A-N-D.

DP 1: When you guys are together does he talk about

PJ: I can make him talk.

DP 1: Does he talk about like, there's a little boy around too.

PJ: He gets pretty emotional and then he'll shut up. But I can make him talk. Cause he always says I'll do anything for you. I'm supposed to be his girlfriend. I am and I'm not but he says I'll tell you anything. Don't get me wrong I don't... This is starting to really scare me that I've been going out with somebody. Now that you put me ... show me that picture and now its

5/279

DP 1: Do you think be might have took Jacob. Do you think he could possibly do that?

PJ: Yeah, I would think so.

DP 1: Why do you think that?
PJ: I think he might have done it. Because I know.

DP 1: Where would Jacob be if he took him? Where do you think he would keep him?

End of side one.
Side 2.

DP 1: This is very important Peggy, very, very important. I want you to be square with us. I think you have been, I just want to make sure everything you've been telling us has been the truth so far, as best to your knowlege?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 1: Okay. Cause we want to look out for your safety too, you know. If he is involved somehow and we're not saying he is we don't want you to get hurt.

DP 2: Have you have been to that hunting shack up by Ulen?

PJ: No. All he says to me is don't ask. But he's like a big pussy cat that's all I'm going to say, you know.

DP 1: Has he given you any indication where this spot might be up there, is it near his parents place?

PJ: It's on the border line between North Dakota and where Ulen is. I used to live on Leech Lake and I used to go through Park Rapids and go to Fargo but I don't remember driving through Ulen do you? Where's Ulen, that's what he told me.

DP 2: Ulen is right here. Here's the town of Ulen right there. There's Fargo and Moorhead, here's Detroit Lakes over here, okay. The town of Ulen is over in here.

PJ: That's all he talks about.

DP 2: Just the town of Ulen.

PJ: And the only thing like we have in common when we went out is how much he likes to go out to Fargo to the Grainery, the mall over there, and sit there and eat pickles or that. He knows that area.

DP 2: The Fargo area.

DP 1: When he goes out there, any idea what he goes hunting for? Does he talk about his hunting at all?

S/280

J: Yeah, I think he just hunts. Otherwise he just goes up there to this place and he just wants to get away from it all. You do know he had a nervous breakdown.

DP 1: Yeah he told us that.

PJ: And that he was falling apart. So why he told me that I don't know.

DP 1: Probably cause you're his friend.

DP 2: He hasn't mentioned lately that he's got himself a son has he?

PJ: He never mentions that to me. He only talks about family to me and he wouldn't talk about it to anyone else.

DP 1: But he hasn't said lately that he's got a son?

PJ: His son is dead.

DP 1: Right.

PJ: But he said if he had it all to do over again he wouldn't make the same mistakes. But now when I see this

DP 1: What about his brothers and sisters, does he talk about them at all?

J: No. Not really. But I've been over to the house and I've sat there one, just three days ago and he opened up this scrap book and he was so proud of these pictures that he has in that house in this photo album.

DP 1: What are the pictures of?

PJ: Kids.

DP 1: His kids or other kids?

PJ: His family. At least that's what he told me.

DP 2: All kids in there, any adults?

PJ: He was in there but

DP 1: Was he with any of the kids or was just his picture?

PJ: It was like his picture then there was a bunch of kids and he was so proud.

DP 1: Now these kids, were they boys, girls?

PJ: Mostly boys.

DP 1: About what age do you think?

PJ: Like just 5 or 6.

DP 1: Do you have any kids Peggy?

2039

S/281

PJ: No. Why did you go out to that house?

DP 1: Cause we had to talk to him.

PJ: How did you get his name, for what?

DP 2: Down at the bar the other night. Somebody in the bar saw this in the paper and saw you guys in the bar and said that looks like him.

PJ: Well I don't know.

DP 1: What are your plans for the rest of the day today. Are you going to be around if we want to call you or something?

PJ: Yeah I guess so why. But I think I'm going to talk to , he doesn't have a phone.

DP 1: I'm sure he'll get ahold of you.

PJ: You know what he'll do?

DP 2: Do you have a car?

PJ: Not here, not here in town its up in northern Minnesota.

DP 2: What kind of car do you have?

PJ: Its a Celica.

DP 1: A Toyota?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 2: How long have you owned that?

PJ: For a while.

DP 1: How long has it been up north?

PJ: It's over at my mom's.

DP 1: How long has it been there? Has ever driven it is what I want to know.

PJ: No. You know what did too? He lost his car.

DP 1: Which car?

PJ: Whatever that red thing was.

DP 1: What do you mean he lost it?

PJ: I'm saying like this morning, ok, its really been a long day and you guys aren't really helping me anything through this.

DP 1: Are you saying you have a hangover?

S/282

PJ: No, well maybe a little, no. I'm just sort of tired, it's like calls and says you got to help me out he called me this morning. I says what. Ok we went out and we drank last night, you know, and it was like

DP 1: You had a good time?

PJ: Yeah, ok, leave it at that, you know. He lost the car.

DP 1: How did you get home last night then?

PJ: I can take care of myself. I walked. But he calls me at 7:00 this morning and says I can't find my car I don't know what to do. So we went over to Perkins and had breakfast at 7:30 in the morning. I told , I said boy, how in the world can you go somewhere and loose your car? I said when I left you, you had a black suit on and those black sunglasses and here he was jogging around here a different change of clothes and then he's wondering where his car was so he called, we had breakfast at Perkins. So he had to call a cab to get home and then he called me back from some pay phone booth, mad that somehow the car or whatever, I don't know what happened to it.

DP 2: Well he's got it back.

PJ: Yeah, he found it didn't he?

DP 1: Somewhere, he has it now. Is that the only car he owns that you know about.

PJ: No I think he's got two. He's got a truck too doesn't he, yeah, I've seen the truck.

DP 2: A truck or a station wagon.

PJ: He's got a truck.

DP 1: Do you remember what color it is.

PJ: Light blue.

DP 2: Is it a big one or a little one.

PJ: It's nothing real big or fancy, were not talking like a Blazer, like a Chevy Blazer or something.

DP 2: No but I mean is it like a little Toyota truck?

PJ: Yeah.

DP 2: Small one? Where's that at do you know.

PJ: Not off hand.

DP 1: Is it an older truck or newer?

PJ: I'd say it's about 7 years old.

5/283

P 1: Have you ever been in it?

PJ: I've seen it.

DP 1: Over at his house?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 1: How about that station wagon have you seen that too?

PJ: No, I saw the truck and his car, until this morning when he lost the car then he calls up jogging and says.. You know what it's like to get up at 7:00 in the morning and just say well we got to meet lets go to Perkins, I got to talk to you. So we go over to Perkins, sit there and talk.

DP 2: What did you talk about this morning.

PJ: I talked about what in the heck happened to his fancy black suit and black eyeglasses, black sunglasses. And he's telling me not to worry about it he said I lost my car. I said how in the world do you go out and lose your car? You know? And I said you must have done something wrong, you just don't go park a car and just lose it. He said well maybe I don't care about it I'm gonna lose this car I don't want anything to do with this car. He must have seen it over there then.

DP 2: The car was at home.

PJ: Yeah, oh yeah, sure.

DP 1: Do you know what we mean by big and little truck though? I mean you've seen alot of these little trucks around. Is that blue one like that or is it a full size, what they call a full size? Is it big, is it long, is it about the size of this car.

PJ: No it's a small truck.

DP 1: Is it a pickup truck?

PJ: Yeah, just a basic 1979 truck. I'm not talking like a Chevy Blazer or anything like that, I'm just talking about

DP 1: It only has two seats in it?

PJ: Uh huh.

DP 1: I can't think of anything to add.

PJ: Are you going to go back and talk with him?

P 1: Not right now, no.

DP 2: Sooner or later we will.

S/284

PJ: You can't let him know that you talked to me. You can reach me. Cause now I'm going He'll reach me, he always does. I had no idea that he's involved.

DP 1: Well it's possible that he isn't. We just want to try to figure it out.

DP 2: This is Deputy Jacobs business card, on the back I wrote phone number to the Task Force office. If in talking to him, he says anything else will you call and let us know right away?

PJ: He'll reach me. He'll go next door to use the phone.

DP 1: If he comes up and says I've got to talk to you about what happened to this Wetterling kid or something like that, call us.

DP 2: Or if you can remember anything else he said about where this hunting shack is or anything else, let us know ok. This is real important.

PJ: Little kids

DP 2: Like you said if you were the parents of that child wouldn't you want to know?

PJ: Yeah.

DP 1: But whatever you do, don't put yourself in a position where you might get hurt, okay, we don't want you to get hurt. So don't ask too many questions either.

PJ: I'm no detective either.

DP 1: Don't ask so many questions where it sounds funny. We don't want you to get yourself hurt, I think you've went through enough already.

DP 1: Who's the ex-boyfriend who beat you up?

PJ: Steve Macky.

DP 2: I've heard that name before.

PJ: Well I was the one who ended up in St. Cloud hospital left for dead. Police officers came there and survived me.

DP 1: So are you going to counciling then or anything then?

PJ: Yes, I go once a week to get through physical abuse.

DP 1: How's it going.

5/285

PJ: Alright. That's why when I came over here I came from the Women's Shelter.

PJ: If I here from him. So I shouln't ask too many questions.

DP 1: Don't ask too many but if you can find out something fine. But don't put yourself in a position where you're going to get hurt. Okay. Take care of yourself is what we're telling you.

PS-6-0230-01

5/390

TYPE OF REPORT
- ☐ Initial Report
- ☐ Investigation Report
- ☐ Criminal Information
- ☐ Case Closure
- ☐ Other_____

MINNESOTA DEPARTMENT OF PUBLIC SAFETY

BUREAU OF CRIMINAL APPREHENSION

REPORT OF INVESTIGATION

Approved by_____

Bureau Number	Offense Category		MN Offense Code
89000535	Kidnapping		
County of Occurrence	**Date and Time of Incident**	**Submitted by**	**Section**
Stearns	11/11/89, 2:43 p.m.	Everett Doolittle	
Case Title		**Date and Time of Activity**	
Jacob Wetterling Abduction		11/11/89	

The following is a telephone interview conducted on 11/11/89 with , ex-wife of .

ED: Can I get your full name and date of birth?

LM:

ED: You've been divorced 12 years.

LM: Yes

ED: So was your ex-husband.

LM: Right.

ED: How long were you two married?

LM: For five years.

ED: How many children do you have?

LM: Two.

ED: And at the time of divorce what were there ages.

LM: They were two and four.

ED: And what were there names?

LM: and .

ED: is how old?

LM: She is 16.

ED: is?

LM: 14.

ED: Is that ?

LM: Yes.

2021

S/391

ED: So you were starting to explain to me that you thought you had suspicions with the children?

LM: Yes, with my oldest daughter.

ED: What kind, why?

LM: Well, as far as, at the time I wasn't sure but I thought after that he could have been sexually abusing her but I could never really prove it and with the younger daughter then he pretty much rejected her. As far as how he was with other kids I guess it was normal. He has alot of emotional problems. He's schizophrenic and I know the VA hospital probably can give you alot of information you know over the recent years. He's bothered us from time to time but.

ED: Ok, now you said you had suspicions. Was there anything special that brought that out? Why would you wonder about that?

LM: Well I guess, one time when we were together my oldest daughter, her vagina was real red and I talked to him about it and he didn't say anything.

ED: Now does he have visitation rights?

LM: No, he tried about four years ago to get visitation rights. And what he finally got was supervised visitation with the , the younger daughter. refused to see him, she has real bad feelings for him, in which she doesn't want to see him at all. And that only lasted about a year where he didn't communicate with her, where if he asked for anything he asked about and that was it. So we ended that.

ED: So the older one is the one he asked about.

LM: Yes.

ED: Now did the girl ever say anything about what daddy did or anything.

LM: No. The only thing ever told me was don't leave us with daddy anymore. He's mean to and that was all she would say. And that's when I left and we got divorced so then we didn't have to worry about it anymore.

ED: Why did you get divorced. I know that's a personal questions and I apologize for that.

LM: Well he was physically abusing me and he's a chronic alcoholic, and drug problems too which I didn't really find out about until afterwards either. But it was his violence.

ED: The violence, ok. Where did you live when you were first married?

LM: We lived up by Fargo.

ED: Where would that be?

LM: It was about, oh, ten miles from Glendon, Minnesota.

2022

5/392

ED: Do you know the name of the town?

LM: Yes, it was Glendon.

ED: Is he from Glendon?

LM: No, he's from a town called Ulen, Minnesota. But that's in the general area too.

ED: Does he have a cabin or a farm or any property up there?

LM: Not that I know of, all I know of him is having a house in St. Cloud, or Waite Park.

ED: Now does his family have a home up there where he's from?

LM: Yes, he's got a sister living up there, and a brother.

ED: A sister and a brother living up there. OK. Do you know there names?

LM: Yeah, his brother is and then his sister is

ED: How do you spell that?

LM: Oh boy, I think.

ED: So was it a farm place up there?

LM: No his sister lives in town. In a town called Ulen. And his brother lives about 3 miles north of there. Kind of like a community, there's only about 3 or 4 houses there.

ED: Now you never had a son, you two. Now if he talked about a son dying or something like this, what would he be talking about. Or a boy? Does that mean anything to you?

LM: No that really doesn't, I wouln't know anything about that.

ED: He had said something to a person and they shared it with us and it was quite confusing and so we thought that if maybe recently he had a son die.

LM: Well if he did I really wouldn't know about it cause I never had a miscarriage or anything when I was married to him.

ED: Did he ever talk about when he was young of being abused or anything?

LM: Well he did have a bad home life as far as his mother was running around. He always resented that. The only thing I know about but it wasn't from him when we went to court over this visitation was that in the medical report it said that the doctor thought that his dad had been abusing him when he was a child.

ED: Sexually?

2023

5/393

LM: Sexually, yes. But this is what the doctor felt, whether he admitted that or not I have no idea.

ED: Now would you know who doctor or what records these would be in?

LM: Well, my lawyer had the records now if he would have gotten to keep them I don't know, I never actually got to read them myself. And if he had to return them, I don't know that either.

ED: OK. Is there anything else you can think of?

LM: Not off hand, I know in the last six months that I know of, he's been drinking again.

ED: He quit for a while.

LM: Yeah, for a quite a few years he's been on a real strong medicine that's been keeping him fairly level.

ED: Do you know what it is?

LM: I have no idea, its a real strong sedative type thing but I know he went off the medicine and then I know he's been drinking again because he was bothering me for a while this summer and he'll write the girls letters and you know sometimes they make sense and sometimes they don't. But he had something about having a girlfriend in Fargo in one of the last letters.

ED: He didn't say who she was, or did he?

LM: Yeah, I can't even remember now.

ED: Do you still have that letter?

LM: Yeah, I think I do.

ED: Ok, I can get that from you later. You know we don't know for sure but we're trying to check every possible lead.

LM: You know when I heard the description, I thought of him too but then when I saw the pictue in the paper it looked like a much older person.

ED: Again that's through the eyes of the witness and a period of time after, so.

LM: Yeah, see and I know he has that piercing, I mean he can really look mean you know but I just thought, I don't know, I mean what he's capable of I really don't know. I know he's a very violent person.

ED: What kind of vehicles has he had?

LM: I really don't know what he's driving. He had a maroon LTD at one time but now over the last couple of years I have no idea what he would be driving.

2024

5/394

ED: Alright, we appreciate it. My name is Agent Everett Doolittle, with the Bureau of Criminal Apprehension. If you have any questions, get a hold of me and I'll probably be getting back to you on this. I probably don't have to see you then, this should suffice at this point.

LM: Ok, I should be home most of the day tomorrow if you need to call for anything.

ED: Ok, thanks alot, we appreciate it.

5/291

This is a taped interview with Peggy Kay Johnson taken at the Stearns County Law Enforcement Center on November 13, 1989. Time 10:35 a.m. Deputy Scott Steinberg and Special Agent Joel Kohout.

JK: Do you remember what you said when you called in? I read it this morning too and I can't recall at all but it was about his past and his sexual involvement with kids. Can you elaborate on that a little bit for us?

PJ: Well, it started out when he said that he had lost a son. I think he really only had two daughters. But he lost a son is what he told me. I don't think he'd ever say anything about that. He was telling me that he would never lose another son again. I was basically talking to him with this yesterday so then I sort of asked him questions about why he goes up to Fargo cause remember like I told you I don't know where Ulen is. But he goes up between Ulen and Fargo and then he started talking about this reservation, it's an Indian reservation.

SS: He has a cabin on this Indian reservation?

PJ: I don't think its a cabin, I think its just a place. I could be wrong.

SS: Is it his or somebody else's?

PJ: He talks like its his.

SS: He talks like its his?

PJ: Yeah, so I didn't go any farther than that.

SS: Did he explain to you anywhere else where it might be. Somewhere between Ulen and Fargo and an Indian reservation.

PJ: Wherever that Indian reservation is.

JK: We can get a map when we're done and take a look at what's on there.

PJ: But what's really getting me scared is like then he'll say things and then he forgets. Like he lost his car the other night. So then he calls me, I don't know, all strange hours basically, and then he can't remember.

JK: Do you think he's having blackouts maybe?

PJ: Well I think he drinks alot too much. But it's like he doesn't remember what he does. The different things in his life.

JK: Ok.

2065

PJ: And it's like I asked him cause it's his photograph album book that I saw. His kids.

SS: Where did you see that album.

PJ: His house.

SS: In his house in Waite Park.

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: Ok. Can you describe that book for us a little bit more? What does it look like?

PJ: Basically, just a basic photograph book. He was so proud of it. Taken of kids and he was so proud of himself being, I don't know, a football player. You know. I mean he can go out and do things, like when I was over and looking at the photograph book and it's like in all of the sudden he disappeared into the bathroom and then he comes out dressed in a We were just going to go out for dinner. And he comes dressed up in the solid black suit and these black sunglasses. I mean this is getting close to winter, you know. And I just had on a pair of blue jeans you know. It's like he's all dressed up to whatever not. So it's sort of embarrassing to go out with somebody in a black suit and tie like that just to

SS: Where was that photograph album? Where did he keep it?

PJ: He had it in his bedroom cause he went and got it.

JK: Did this have naked kids in it?

PJ: Yeah, a couple of them. I can't really, you know, they were younger though.

JK: Was it like baby pictures with bare bottoms?

PJ: No not baby pictures like that.

SS: They were definitely nude?

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: What kind of picture was it? A front, side, back of the children?

PJ: Front.

SS: Their genitals were exposed?

PJ: Uh huh.

JK: How old a kid would you say? Just guessing.

PJ: Eight.

JK: Did you ask him about why he had pictures of nude boys?

PJ: Well then I said, just why do you have this? And he said well don't worry about it. So I just didn't worry about it. But now he tells me that his house isn't anything great. But now he was telling me yesterday that he's got to sell the house cause he's got to get out of the town.

JK: Did he say why?

SS: Selling which house?

PJ: The house that he lives in out there in Waite Park. He's going to sell it, he's going to leave.

SS: You mentioned a person by the name of Thomas Sullivan. Who's he.

PJ: He's a friend, that's who he talks about.

SS: Have you ever met him?

PJ: No.

SS: You don't have any idea of what he might look like, where he lives.

PJ: No, but I could find out. It's not like to go without calling me every 5 hours. Now he's concerned, what he told me yesterday is that maybe I said something that I shouldn't have said. And what he said about selling the house, as far as I know it's probably paid for. But he talked about this Indian reservation and got me really concerned with different things.

SS: Like what, can you elaborate on that a little more?

PJ: About how he goes up there.

SS: Does he tell you what he does when he goes up there?

PJ: No. I just figure maybe he goes up there and goes hunting. You know, up in that type of country, I haven't been there. I just figure maybe it grouse hunting season, or you know go grouse hunting or deer hunting.

SS: Does he tell you that he hunts?

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: He does. Does he say what he does hunt?

PJ: Well no, but I just assume he goes hunting like for deer or something up there.

SS: Have you ever seen any guns?

PJ: No. I don't think so.

SS: Does Sullivan go with him?

PJ: He must or he could have. I never really got to the point of to really ask him you know who went up.

SS: When you called he other night, the information that was on that sheet you mentioned that him and Sullivan go up there and do sexual things with children. Did he tell you that?

PJ: Not in so many words.

SS: What kind of words did he use?

PJ: He, its where they can go a release all their sexual frustrations. Because he goes up there.

JK: Do you think he might have been referring to women?

PJ: He could have but I don't think that the type of person that would just pick up, you know, like take a girl up there in that type of situation. It's like something else bottom line up there or he gets more satisfaction, I get the feeling that he gets more satisfaction with these kids.

JK: Has he ever had any kids over when you've been around?

PJ: No.

JK: Do you have any kids?

PJ: No.

JK: I just met you so I don't know what you talked about with him (Steinberg) before but do you thinks he's capable of being the one who took Jacob?

PJ: Yes and no because for some reason its like I get the very strange feeling with the split personality. Now maybe he's an occupational therapist, and sometimes its just like then he doesn't remember different things and then He's like a big pussy cat in a way and then yet he can just change and try to be a real macho man.

JK: But have you asked him that point blank? About Jacob?

PJ: No. I wasn't going to say that. He asked me. Because he was concerned about what the police that were coming over and what he said was well you know they think I'm the one and then he just said well what if I am to me. And I said well if you were that person then you better get some information out. And then he sort of shut up. Then he asked me do you think I could do something like that? And I don't believe anybody can do anything like that. The abduction or whatever.

SS: What did he say then? You told him that you don't think anybody could do it?

PJ: That's what I said.

SS: What did he say in response? Anything?

PJ: He said sometimes people do strange things. And by that time I almost believed it. Now I haven't even slept with this cause I saw him Saturday and I saw him yesterday afternoon.

JK: Is he acting any different than he has. You've known him for a while I take it. Is he acting any different now than he was before the abduction?

PJ: Not all that much. Maybe I'm just getting to really know him better that I can see both sides. But yeah, it bothers me that if you know, he doesn't come out and say that he was the one. And I certainly can't really say it. But it's like he gives me indications that maybe he's trying to reach out for help and now he's in such a situation now he doesn't know what to do. So that's why he says he's going to sell the house.

SS: Can we go back to the photo album for a minute. Do you remember what color it was?

PJ: It was either dark green or navy. I don't know it's just one of those type of photo albums book that you'd probably pick up at K-Mart or something you know for $4.99.

JK: With rings and plastic pages.

PJ: It had plastic things inside but it didn't have the rings it was just solid.

SS: Could it possibly have been brown?

PJ: Well yeah.

SS: Were there family pictures in there too?

PJ: Yeah a few. Now I don't even know if his parents are still alive.

SS: How about pictures of his daughter, were they in there? Not necessarily nude, just pictures of his daughter.

PJ: Yeah, a couple.

SS: You said he took that out of the bedroom, now do you know where in the bedroom he had it.

PJ: Probably in a dresser drawer, I'm just assuming.

SS: You didn't see where he got it from, he just brought it out and showed it to you.

PJ: Uh huh. And then he said I also have alot of other pictures that I'd like to show you someday. And by that time we were walking out the door because I wanted to leave. But he's more concerned about that book.

SS: Which book?

PJ: The photo album book.

JK: Concerned that what?

PJ: Because of the pictures that are in there.

JK: You mean he's worried that someone's going to find it?

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: When you talked to him yesterday did he say if that was still in the house?

PJ: When I said about the book, he said I still have it but nobody will ever find it is what he told me. I don't know what that's supposed to mean.

SS: After we talked to you on Saturday, you met with him I assume, Saturday afternoon sometime. Did you talk about anything then? Did you ask him any questions about the photo album or anything else?

PJ: No.

SS: Are you sure, cause then he would have had time to go home and hide that book somewhere before we got over there. Cause he was home for a considerable period of time before we ever got over to his house.

PJ: You came over on a Tuesday didn't you?

SS: No we came over Saturday morning. And we went to his house Saturday night looking for the photo album and didn't find it.

PJ: Well I saw the photo album before then.

SS: I know.

PJ: Maybe I did say something to the effect, maybe he did go out and move it. Yeah because we were

SS: Did you guys go out drinking Saturday afternoon?

PJ: Not me, he did. He called and wanted to meet me downtown.

SS: You didn't go a meet him then?

PJ: Yeah, I met him.

SS: Where was he at, do you remember?

PJ: He was probably at alot of different places.

SS: Where did you meet him at?

PJ: Right on the corner of Dan Marsh(sp?) Drugstore. I just walked out the door from where I live and then we just said I'll meet you here.

SS: Where did you go from there.

PJ: Because he doesn't have a phone. So he calls from either Dan Marsh or he'll call from Perkins.

SS: When you met him where did you go?

PJ: Well we started to walk, we went down, well he said it was the... Went down about six blocks away from where I live. I think it was that pub, we went there.

SS: Which pub?

PJ: Rudy's? McRutes? It's got a green awning. I don't know, I've only been in there twice in my life. But that's where we went. I think he was drinking beer and then we started to talk.

SS: Did you mention anything to him about us talking to you that day?

PJ: No. Cause then he called right afterwards.

SS: Right after we got done talking to you.

PJ: Yeah, he wanted to meet me. But I was going to meet my girlfriend and what ... but something was on his mind so something had to have been on his mind yesterday too when I saw him. This guy acted like he just didn't, at least when he's sometimes with me in that type of situation he'll open up to me. But he knew I was upset about that photo album book.

SS: When did he know you were upset about it?

PJ: Well it was probably right after I talked to you. Because it was no sooner than you dropped me off at the car that I see this big message on my door that said called.

SS: You told me about that when I called you back that he had called. So then he called again right after that and you met him.

PJ: Yeah. Well no not right away, I didn't meet him right away.

SS: Somewhere along the line you met him though.

PJ: It was probably seven hours later.

JK: On Saturday?

PJ: Well that's when I saw them on Saturday. But he knew about that photo album book even before I talked to you guys. I mean how you even got my phone number is probably cause he gave it to you.

SS: Yes he did. What did he say about that photo album? Anything on Saturday. You said he put it somewhere where nobody could find it right?

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: He didn't say where though.

PJ: He said it wasn't in the house. Or if it was in his car; or if its out in back in that house. But its not that big of a house but if you ask me it looks like a disaster area.

SS: You got that right.

PJ: You know. But I think if he's smart enough, he is smart enough to know where to... I would say its on the property somewhere that or he keeps it in his car.

SS: The size of it.

PJ: Its just like a typical, 8-1/2. 11, you know, not a real little one. Just a basic one it probably had like about 20 pages, the cellophane where you can take the pictures out and then you can fold them back over. But it wasn't spiral.

SS: Instead of the pocket type, it had the cellophane thing.

PJ: It is like an 8-1/2 by 11 inch you could open up and put like six pictures on one page. You didn't slip them in a little type of envelope type of thing.

SS: Ok. Was the whole book full. Were there some blank pages in the back that didn't have anything in them?

PJ: Yeah, some of them were still blank. I would say it had about 25 pages but I would say probably only about 10.

SS: That had pictures in them.

PJ: Uh huh.

JK: Why did he want you to look at it? Did he say the first time? Did he say here I want you to see what my family looks like or look at these pictures.

PJ: We had gone to his house and he just brought it out.

JK: But was there something special he wanted you to see or did he let you page through it yourself?

PJ: No I sat down and looked with him for a while.

SS: Did he point out any particular pictures that he was extremely proud of?

PJ: Well when he said that he was extremely proud of this is when I just almost said that we should leave because it was just getting sickening to look at. It was naked kids and I don't think that's anything to be proud of.

JK: How many naked kids were in there? Just a guess, half the pictures, a quarter of the pictures?

PJ: Um, six, there were other pictures in there too. I mean just basic pictures of a house or something like that really didn't mean that much to me.

SS: The pictures of the kids. Where were they taken. Would it have been indoors, outdoors?

PJ: Indoors.

SS: What kind of setting was it in do you know?

PJ: Rustic, but it wasn't at his house.

JK: All the same boys or different boys?

PJ: Different. I mean they were different, one was blonde and most of them had just brown hair.

JK: Does he talk to you about liking to be sexually involved with boys.

PJ: Well he says to the effect that most of his friends are men. And then he met me and all of the sudden he calls me his girlfriend.

JK: Does he have, I don't want to get personal, but does he have a physical relationship with you, a sexual relationship?

PJ: Once.

JK: So its not an ongoing thing. You're more friends then?

PJ: Yeah, well yeah.

JK: Than boyfriend/girlfriend, or lovers?

PJ: Yeah.

JK: Ok

PJ: But its like he'll call me up and I will go meet him. Especially now with this whole situation. I think my gosh, what if this guy is. I'm just beginning to think that he has a split personality.

SS: Peggy, this is real important. I want you to think because when I talked to you the other day when we talked about those pictures you told me they were outdoor pictures. The kids were outdoors in the trees or in the woods of the nude children. Now you just told me they were indoors. I want you to think real hard, which is it, are they indoors or are the outdoor pictures? Try and remember the best you can. You're giving me a little bit of a conflicting story. We have to know its important, ok.

PJ: What I'm saying is when I was looking at the pictures some of them were indoors and maybe some of them were outdoors too. I would say more outdoors. Like I said I only saw about like probably seven, six or seven.

SS: Were there more you didn't look at?

PJ: I closed the book cause it was just getting sickening, you know. But there were some taken outdoors and there were some taken indoors too.

SS: I don't want you to feel that you have to tell me what I want to hear or try and correct your story from last time ok. Because its real important that we know where these things are. So to the best of your memory don't tell me if they were indoors or outdoors because you think I want to hear, because that's what you said last time. What you told us last time is important but what we're getting from you today is also

important. If you think that it changed, just say so. Don't try and say they were both because you feel that's going to cover everything, ok. If you feel they were all indoors say so, ok. I'm not trying to make you feel like, how do I want to say it, I'm not calling you a liar and I'm not saying what you said was wrong, just so we can get it so we'll know where were at.

JK: We didn't find these pictures.

SS: We didn't find them and we need to find them if we can and we need to know what we're looking for so that's why its important.

PJ: They were indoors, yeah.

SS: All of them were indoors?

PJ: Pretty sure, yeah.

SS: Ok.

PJ: There was like seven, like I said there was eight of them.

JK: Is there anything else we didn't find that Peggy described that we want. I wasn't out there at the house so I'm not sure what they were looking for.

SS: We didn't find anything. These pictures. Do you know what a Polaroid picture is.

PJ: Sure.

SS: Were they Polaroids?

PJ: No, I would say just a basic instamatic, Kodak.

SS: So they would have had to have been developed someplace.

PJ: Yeah, I think so, they weren't Polaroid.

SS: Does he ever mention anything, does he have a camera? Have you ever seen a camera?

PJ: No, I haven't seen a camera. But I never asked him, you know you just don't go do you have a camera. I mean then he'd really start to wonder.

SS: Has he taken any pictures when you've been along. Has he taken any pictures of you or anything else?

PJ: No. He's never even asked to take a picture of me.

SS: Ok. He hasn't asked you to take any pictures of him then or anything else as far as that goes.

PJ: No.

SS: He travels alot. Is he gone alot?

PJ: Yeah I think so.

SS: We found some receipts from the Fargo area. Does he tell you about any of these places he goes. When he goes, why he goes?

PJ: He just says he has to get away is what he tells me.

SS: If he goes someplace as far as you know he going to his shack or whatever it is. And all you know is its between Ulen and Fargo on an Indian reservation?

PJ: Its close by an Indian reservation.

SS: I'm going to go find a map. (went to get map, turned off tape).

SS: Remember I showed you were Ulen was the other day on the map?

PJ: Uh huh. Basically south of Park Rapids cause I've never been there.

SS: There's Ulen, the closest Indian reservation is up here in Mahnomen County, White Earth Indian Reservation. Also goes into Becker County, its not towards Fargo at all it would be the other direction.

PJ: Uh huh.

SS: Did he give you any kind of indication of where on this Indian reservation it might be?

PJ: Just close by and that's why he goes up to Fargo or wherever.

SS: Its close by Ulen in other words.

PJ: Yeah, he said it was close to an Indian reservation.

SS: Ulen is not that far from the Indian reservation itself.

End of Side 1
Begin Side 2

SS: He's never taken you to that cabin, right.

PJ: No, but he has mentioned it to me if ever I want to go up there.

SS: More than once?

PJ: Yeah, more than once, that he'd take me up there.

SS: Could that cabin be in somebody else's name? Is it somebody else's and he's using it.

PJ: That could be. I honestly can't answer that because I don't honestly know. But he just says he goes up there. I just assumed he had it, that he owned it. I didn't ask to see a title or anything.

SS: How about this Thomas Sullivan, could it be his? You said he went there with Sullivan when you called the other day. Do you think it might be his?

PJ: Could be, I don't honestly really know. But I could ask

SS: Do you know if this Sullivan is an Indian?

PJ: No I don't even know that. It sounded like a basic Irish name or something. I didn't go and ask is this guy an Indian, you know.

SS: I thought maybe he might have given you some idea.

PJ: No.

SS: I guess Sullivan doesn't sound to Indian does it?

PJ: No, its not like white earth or white bird.

JK: Is that something you can ask him about? Work the conversation around to it?

PJ: Yeah. Another strange thing is now he tells me he's an occupational therapist but he said he took a week off and he said he took another week off. And I said today is Monday, I said are you going to work? He said I just remembered I took some more days off.

JK: We don't think he probably is.

PJ: Do you think he works at the VA as an occupational therapist?

SS: I don't believe he works anywhere right now.

PJ: I don't think he does either, but what he told me is that he took some time off. And I just assumed that maybe he did work there. Because he mentioned Viet Nam to me and you would think with the veterans or something maybe that's how he got the job. I just didn't really question it too much. But now I am beginning to question alot of things. Like why does he have all this time off?

JK: Right.

SS: I can't think of anything else right now.

PJ: I can't either.

JK: Would you be willing to meet with us again if we have some more questions?

PJ: Ok.

SS: This will conclude the taped interview with Peggy Kay Johnson, dated November 13, 1989, time 11:10 a.m.

kf

INTERVIEW WITH UNKNOWN
Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=Special Agent Dee Levine
A=Theresa Godfrey

Q: Is this on? All right well my watch says that it's 7:15 on, um, Monday evening, uh, the 11th -- I mean the 13th of November. And, uh, let's start by identifying who's in the room. I'm Dr. John Rhetts.

A: I'm Theresa Godfrey.

Q1: And I'm Dee Levine, I'm the camera man and the hypnosis coordinator for the Minneapolis office of the FBI.

Q: Okay, and, um, my understanding is that you saw or somehow observed something that is of relevance to the FBI. And, uh, that you are - in general, you know, we haven't talked anything about what hypnosis is or is not, in general you're willing to find out about hypnosis and see whether or not it might help you to recall, uh, more specifically or some details or something about what you saw in order to be helpful to the FBI and the investigation that it's conducting. Is that generally correct?

A: That's why I'm here.

((0:01:00))

Q: Okay, it's important to get that on the table?

A: Oh, okay.

Q: Some of what I say is to make a record of it and some is just we're talking.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay, so, um, what in general we do when we do this kind of interview is it - it has about three main steps. The first step is I need to find out what it is you saw, uh, or heard or whatever it was. So that I know what questions to ask you later.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So that will take us a few minutes while you just generally tell me what it is that - that you saw. Then what we will do is we will talk about what hypnosis is and what it's not and after I've done all that if you're comfortable then you'll try to hypnotize you and see if you're hypnotizable.

A: Okay.

Q: Some people are very, very hypnotizable. Some people are practically not at all hypnotizable. Most people are somewhere in the middle and we'll find out how hypnotizable you are.

((0:02:00))

Q: And then if you're hypnotizable then we'll have you go back into hypnosis a second time and this time I'll under hypnosis ask you to recall those same events or observations or whatever it was to see if that helps, uh, increase the information your remember or sharpen your memory or whatever it might do.

A: Okay.

Q: So those will be the three - the three phases of what we're gonna do. And I want you to please feel free to ask me a question at any time if you start to feel either uncomfortable or you are just getting kind of getting weary and you want to take a break or go get a drink of water or - I don't know if you smoke. If you need to smoke a cigarette or any of those kinds of things. Please feel free to interrupt me.

A: Okay.

Q: You're here as a - as a volunteer and I don't by my rolling along want to make you feel like you have to just sit there and wait to see what unfolds next.

A: Okay.

Q: You can tell me that, yeah, I'd like to take a break - let's do it and we can do it.

A: Okay.

Q: Also if something I'm saying isn't clear, please feel free to ask me.

((0:03:00))

Q: Even if it seems like I'm rolling along on some kind of point just interrupt me and say I didn't understand what you meant by that.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Because it's real important to even though we're only here for a little while and we're trying to get something done and get onwards whatever the rest of the investigation or our ordinary lives, I think it's real important that you not feel pressed into something that you're not quite sure what I meant. Okay?

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Okay.

Q: Understand it.

A: Good.

Q: Now, um, I gather that you saw something sometime or other that is of interest to the FBI and an investigation that it's working on. And I - and truthfully totally naïve as to what that is. I work with the bureau and have for about the last 10 or a little bit more than 10 years now, helping them - I'm a psychologist and I am experienced in the use of hypnosis and in particular hypnosis used to help, uh, people...

((0:04:00))

Q: ...recall information or - or in - in to help use hypnosis in investigations I guess is the - is the simplest way to put it. And so, uh, I don't work on any investigations. The rest of my life is spent doing practicing in my office but in situations like this I work with the FBI to see if hypnosis can help somebody recall something specifically than they otherwise would. And so I have no idea what you saw. I haven't had anybody describe anything to me and so I need for you to please just kind of give me the background of where were you on whatever day and what did you see and so forth and so on so I know what to ask you about.

A: Okay, it was, uh, November 5th.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And the reason I remember it was November 5th was because I had to work and it was also my husbands and my anniversary. And I thought I only had to work from 8 to 8 but the family that I...

((0:05:00))

A: ...take care of the child had been up in, it was either Brainard or (unintelligible) whichever one is five to six hours away from (unintelligible) - I get the two mixed up.

Q: So do I.

A: Well anyway they called me and said that if they minded me staying over an extra hour to an hour and a half cause they weren't going to be back and they were supposed to be back. And I said that that was fine, you know, although I wanted to be home with my husband.

Q: Okay.

A: So anyway, um, and they got home at 9:00.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Um, Jane the mother ended up signing my - my card to show that I had been there. And I went out and before I gave a report as to what happened to her son while she was gone. Went out and started my van and then I came in quickly and told her what had happened to Danny while she was gone. And then she signed...

((0:06:00))

A: ...my timecard and they had bought a puppy from up north and that's why they were late.

Q: Oh.

A: And I looked at the puppy, said a couple things to him so I figured that maybe took me about maybe 10 minutes to go up to there. So I left their home I figured at about 10 after 9:00. Anyway I was - do you want me to tell you the route that I was going?

Q: Yeah, so that I can in my mind follow along with...

A: Okay, where - there home is located not too far from, um, oh, darn it. I'm tryin' to think. I'm, um, some facility up there that takes, um, oh, God, they're not criminals or offenders. I forgot. The (unintelligible) Correctional Inst.

Q: It's a, uh, juvenile detention center.

A: Yeah, they don't live too far from that. In fact you can see - kind of see it from their back yard. They live on, uh, 364 Thomas.

((0:07:00))

A: Avenue or Street. Well, you'll - you'll find out if you need to. Anyway, I started home and I went over - I took 49 home. As you hit 49 it finally runs into, um, 96. And that's the way I usually go home because it's quieter than trying to get on the highway. I'm not a highway driver. And my speedometer hasn't been working for a while. It goes off and on. So I kind of pace myself with, um, with the other cars.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I've gotten pretty good at it anyway. Um, I was driving and I'm tryin' to think - I went over 35E, yeah I think it's 35E that you go over and I was in the White Bear vici- you know vicinity. I don't know how far - I was kind of rushing a little bit because I wanted to get home before my husband. You know, just have a little time with him before he went to bed because he had to go to work the next day.

((0:08:00))

A: And the car in front of me was, um, I guess driving over cautiously. I don't know how to put it. Overcautious or whatever.

Q: Like slower or something?

A: He was just being extra - extra cautious. How could you put it?

Q: Yeah.

A: You know, I don't have a speedometer, but like I said you get used to it and you pace yourself with other cars. I thought boy you're really moving a little too slow for this area and there really weren't - I mean the traffic was basically kind of dead, you know. Sunday night and it was dead there and anyway I have a van and I'm - was sitting higher up in it and I was just thinking about gettin' home and all of a sudden I - I don't know what made me start thinking. Boy, this guy's really kind of weird, you know, doin' what he was doin'...

((0:09:00))

A: ...and I looked in the, um, well you could see because of the lights on my van. You could see, uh, the passengers in the front seat of the car and, uh, you could tell it was a child over on the - the door and he was really over by the door. And he was staying perfectly still. There was really no conversation between the two at all. He just stayed basically stiff, you know. Really stiff and pushed up against the - closest he could get to that door. And the man kept - well he was drivin' and he kept lookin'. You could see he wasn't doin' a full up into the rear view mirror - which he - with, uh, my lights or whatever you could see that he was going like...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But he had - he was turned just enough...

((0:10:00))

A: ...that you could see and I don't think he appreciated me bein' behind him. And then all of a sudden his hands - he was drivin' like this and his hand went down and it came back up and when he was holding on to the steering wheel it was lower than normal. And you could see he was talking to the child over on the side. And there was something in his hand that was pointed up, but you could only see maybe about this much of it?

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It was fatter than his fingers were. It just looked really, really strange. And then his hand is there and that thing up like that. I thought what the heck is going on and I kept saying to myself, "Kid, why don't you move?" You know.

((0:11:00))

A: Because usually it - a child moves some and he was way over by the door and he stands totally still. And it was just the guy keeping - he didn't like I was doin'. Anyway I started - after I saw that thing come up I started looking down at the, um, license plate. Then I said it to myself quite a few times. I'm thinkin' maybe five times, six. Just kept saying it over and over again. We were coming to the intersection that was going to be hittin' 61. 61 veers either to the left north or to the south headin' toward 694. And I thought he was gonna end up stoppin' and goin' to the north. But then all of a sudden he just...

((0:12:00))

A: ...went the way I was going and I was just ready to do it. And I thought well if he goes the other way I'll just speed up a little bit and look over, but he ended up going the same way.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So I came up behind him in the lane that's closest to the media thing. Watched him for just a little bit more. Looked at the license plate number. Then I went around to the side of the car because that child still had not moved. And I on purpose I went up to him - even to his door and I bent a little bit over and the child turned and he looked. His face was almost into the glass. And his eyes were as big as saucers. He had a real pained expression on his face and I didn't see any color in his face at all.

((0:13:00))

A: Just looked like he was in shock. He was wearing a cap on his head. It was like a stocking cap and it was dark. So then I sped up just a little bit to try to - I was pretty scared. I sped up just a little bit and tried to look in to see if I could see when he looked from the front - cause I - from back - from before I could see him from the back because of my lights. (Unintelligible) from the back. I thought that I'd take a real quick look and get out of there.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So I looked, you know, and the man never, um, he just kept looking straight ahead. It's like he didn't turn at all. And then the boy went back to the (unintelligible). Up against that door.

((0:14:00))

A: And then I - I was in front of him I thought and then all of a sudden I went to - 61 has two lanes and then it has a lane that you can get into to hit White Bear Auto. Got there thinking okay one more time to run past and he went over to the other lane and sped through the stop sign. Then I turned.

Q: And then so you ran the stop sign?

A: No, I didn't run it. It was green.

Q: Oh, okay, so...

A: But he went way over into the far lane and...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Went real fast too.

Q: Okay.

A: See and he had been in this - he had been in the same lane I had been and I went into my turn lane to get on (Whiteford Avenue) but I think (unintelligible) but there's White Bear and there's smaller White Bear?

Q: Mm-hm.

A To get on White Bear you have to take a left.

Q: And what - did you drop behind him?

((0:15:00))

Q: Or did you speed up past him?

A: I sped up and passed him when I tried to take a real quick look at him and...

Q: Okay.

A: ...I was really scared because you know the child's face was just totally petrified. I mean...

Q: (Unintelligible).

A: He looked shocked. He was just - he was really scared.

Q: Mm-hm. So after you passed him then you pulled in front of him and then all the way into the left turn lane.

A: Yeah because my - my...

Q: (Unintelligible).

A: My - my wiper.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I remember to get in to turn you have to wait for the thing to tell you that you can turn. And I figured okay I'll do it one more time when we, you know, I'll look again one more time just to say the number because I'm really bad at

numbers and he wasn't in the lane next to me. He went over on the far right and went pretty fast through the lights.

Q: So it sounds like from what you're saying the major piece that's missing...

((0:16:00))

Q: ...is the license plate.

A: I looked at it.

Q: Right. And you looked at it and you repeated it to yourself.

A: On 96 I did and once on 61 before I went up even with him.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Because I just, you know, after I'd seen the - his hand go down - he was driving with both hands.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But all of a sudden he just went down and his hand came up but it was lower.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: He kept his hand lower than where he had it before. And you could still see a couple of - you could still see his hand there.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But there was - how do you put it?

Q: Something in it.

A: There was a straight - straight up thing. It wasn't his finger and it was a lot fatter.

Q: Mm-hm. Okay. All right, do you remember anything about the car? What car it was?

((0:17:00))

A: All I remember is I - I think it was a white or a cream colored. In the back seat was a flat, you know, straight across. It didn't have any of the - the rests where you put your head?

Q: Mm-hm. And now are you talking about the back seat or the back of the front seat?

A: The back of the front seat.

Q: Okay.

A: And I did not feel that that - the car was not new. It was not a new car.

Q1: Mm-hm. It was a bigger car or smaller? Do you remember how many doors?

A: I had, um, four doors on it. And then, um, what was I gonna tell ya. The man from the back ended up having - he looked pretty tall and he looked like a person that has a lot of...

((0:18:00))

A: ...width across here.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: You know broad shouldered.

Q1: Kind of muscular looking?

A: No, he had - he didn't have a shirt. It wasn't a sweater. It looked like a - you could see, um, I couldn't see the colors but it wasn't a solid shirt. It looked like an almost checked. And you know how some shirts were like - kind of stick to you. This one didn't. He had some - kind of like - bulk in it. But you could see that the man was broad.

Q: Um, did he appear to have anything on his head?

A: All I can remember is seeing the back of his head. It was so dark in there. I mean...

Q: Could you take a guess as to the color of his hair or was it too dark?

((0:19:00))

A: I was saying maybe a brown, um, of course it's gonna - I just remember that he had - it looked like he had hair. Around like this. I noticed that it was trimmed. It didn't look like somebody that looked scraggly. Like hadn't had a haircut. Do you know what I mean. And, uh...

Q: Like me.

A: It wasn't tight curls and it wasn't straight. It was almost like some maybe waves in it and maybe once in a while you'd see a - a hair kind of flip a little bit up. And then I went forward. I noticed that he had some hair in front of his ear.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It didn't look like he had any - I don't think there was any hair on his forehead either. I can't remember. He didn't have any facial hair.

((0:20:00))

A: I can remember thinking. I thought well maybe this could be his father. And I thought I looked - maybe it could be but he looks awful old. But some people have old fathers so.

Q: So this man to you looked old compared to the age of the boy?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Some people have old parents, you know. He was a lot older than I am and I have a 10 year old girl.

A: Mm-hm. Coming back to the car when you - when you looked at the license plate, uh, did you - right now do you have recollection of anything of what was on that license plate?

Q: I just know that the background was white while I was memorizing it. I think it had some - I think that, um, let's see the letters were first and the numbers were last and the - let me see.

((0:21:00))

A: And it seemed to be blue. Yeah.

Q1: Do you know what state it might have been?

A: You know, I didn't look at that. I was trying to do that thing so fast. I should have probably went down a little farther and looked.

Q: Did you notice if it was in any kind of one of those license plate holders?

A: No, I didn't. I was just so busy doing that and then trying to drive.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: You know.

Q: So you didn't see if there was any writing around the license plate that would have said anything?

A: I don't notice it. I mean I didn't notice it.

Q: That's fine. I just need to ask.

A: Yeah. No I didn't notice it.

Q: Did you notice any writing anywhere else on the back of the car when you were looking at it?

A: I was kind of concentrating on the numbers. I've got a really poor memory as to numbers and stuff.

Q: So that's something that you have trouble with?

A: Yeah, I do.

((0:22:00))

Q1: Okay. And you know what, uh, out of state license plates look like it was different. Is that what you're sayin'?

A: Well, out of state ones. Don't they have different colors and stuff?

Q1: Does it - did it look like an out of state or was it a Minnesota plate? Do you know?

A: I think it was Minnesota. I'm not sure.

Q1; Okay.

A: I can tell ya for sure it had a white background and I'm pretty sure it was the blue lettering.

Q: Okay.

A: Cause for some reason it's just sticking in my head. And I know that, uh, the letters were before the numbers.

Q: Okay.

A: That's what I remember. But see I was trying to stay up with him - at the same time trying to do this, you know.

Q: Um, so you don't recall seeing any bumper stickers or anything that said anything about what kind of a car it was or anything like that? Okay. I'm not suggesting you should have. I just need to ask you about those things.

((0:23:00))

A: I was pretty freaked out.

Q: Yeah, when you pulled up beside - well you said earlier - you said you thought it was a four door.

A: I'm pretty sure it was, yes.

Q: And how did you - where do you have that impression from?

A: That was where I was coming along beside.

Q: That's what I assumed. All right. Um, did you see anything else about the car? Did you notice any trim or any bumps or any dents or anything else?

A: No, I just thought to myself that is not a new car.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: That is definitely not a new car and I - it's not a small car.

Q: Yeah.

A: It just looked like an older car...

Q: Yeah.

A: That was, you know, that maybe had some metal to it.

Q: Right, now are you familiar with - with different cars and their model names and all that kind of thing? Or is that something you are kind of familiar.

A: I know Volkswagens and Cadillacs and trucks and vans, but....

Q: Yeah. Okay.

((0:24:00))

A: Maybe a smaller, like your hatchbacks and stuff like that. Yeah, but this was - this was bigger than your small cars.

Q: And did it have, you know, a definite trunk where the back window comes down and then there's a trunk and that - that drops off or did it have a sloping hatchback?

A: It did not have a slope.

Q: Okay.

A: I know it didn't have the slope. I know it didn't have any wings on it. You know, some cars go like this.

Q: Yeah.

A: It didn't have that.

Q: Okay. All right, well I think I've got an idea of the situation. So I think that's chapter one. Now if you'd like to take a break now we can do it or do you want to keep on going we can talk about hypnosis next.

A: That's fine.

Q: Should we go ahead?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay. What I'd like to do and first of all give you a chance to ask - do you have any sort of questions that are already in your mind about hypnosis or would you like me to give my standard little spiel?

A: Why don't you do that?

((0:25:00))

Q: Okay that's fine. Um, hypnosis is something that a lot of people have their own ideas about because every now and again it will show up in movies. Usually kind of dramatic things like The Exorcist or something like that. Uh, then other times people think of, uh, hypnosis as what some, uh, magicians or other stage performers do. But hypnosis in fact has been around for as long as there is recorded human history. Um, there have been very clear descriptions of people going into a state of hypnosis in the bible, in the Koran, uh, in the writings in the inside of the tombs in - of - of the pyramids and in Egypt and all the old, old writings left around by human beings shows us that hypnosis is something that human beings have known about forever and ever. The only...

((0:26:00))

Q: ..difficult part about hypnosis is even today as scientists we have no really very good explanation of exactly how hypnosis takes place in the human mind. So what I'm going to describe to you is kind of ordinary language, everyday English description of what the hypnosis seems to be. And basically what it seems to be is - is that some people can kind of focus and concentrate their attention. Sort of like when you were a kid did you ever take a magnifying glass and go outdoors on a sunny day and either burn a leaf or a piece of paper or the back of your hand? And you know where you put the magnifying glass and make it quite hot under it. Have you ever done that?

A: No.

Q: Have you ever seen anybody do it?

A: Yes.

Q: Okay, so you know what I'm talking about. How you can concentrate in that case - by using that magnifying glass you can concentrate the sun's light and make it just a real pinpoint that happens to also be quite hot.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, well it's like some people seem to be able to do that with their mind. Obviously they are not using magnifying glasses, but it's just (unintelligible) a way...

((0:27:00))

Q: ...of talking that some people are able to focus and concentrate their attention on something that it's like everything else disappears. They can just

concentrate on something and they're unaware of things going around them like the telephone or someone walking into the room and they might be reading a book and they just don't pay attention to people going by and thing like that. And other people can't - can't stop lookin' around. And so hypnosis is a - is a frame of mind that some people can go into in which they concentrate and focus their attention on something. And some people can do that to a very, very high degree and some people can't do it at all. And most people can do it at least a little bit. And indeed some people do it at times sort of all by themselves without anybody telling them to or anything like that. Let me give you a couple examples of that. For example, have you ever had the experience of driving home on some familiar route and...

((0:28:00))

Q: ...arriving at home and not being aware of getting there?

A: I've done that before.

Q: Okay.

A: I just figured you're so used to the...

Q: Yeah, what would you say you were doing while you were driving home? Day dreaming?

A: Yeah.

Q: Yeah. Okay, that might be - now I wasn't with you and we didn't test you back then or anything, but that's the kind of situation in which some people are in a state of - of self-hypnosis. Where they're so focused and concentrated on some idea. They're thinking about what they're gonna do on their anniversary when they get home or wondering how they are gonna pay the bills or what are the kids doing or they're absorbed in something else and they are driving along and I don't recommend it as a way to drive in traffic but lots of us do it. And that's a - that's an ordinary everyday example where a person doing that might well be in a state of hypnosis. Because, uh, you don't have - a - a person can do hypnosis themselves. You don't have to have somebody else around. That's one of the points that I want to make is that I have no power. There is no special anything that I've got.

((0:29:00))

Q: I've taken some courses and I've spent a lot of time working with people, but you can go to the public library and get a book on hypnosis and read all about it. And if you wanted to do it you could probably either hypnotize yourself or

someone else if they were willing to. It's not anything that's so terribly complicated. The only reason I would caution you being careful about that is - is that sometimes a person can go into hypnosis and then the person who did it starts to get scared. And then they don't know what to do and the person who is in hypnosis feels like they've kind of been left hanging and it can be kind of a bad deal. So I don't - I don't recommend going to the public library and doing it. Although college students do it every year at fraternity rushes and other places. They hypnotize somebody and make them squawk like a chicken or do something silly. And people do - are willing under hypnosis sometimes to do what seems like strange things to us. And the second major point I want to tell you and the first one is I don't have any power and...

((0:30:00))

Q: ...and if you do feel comfortable going ahead with hypnosis here this evening with me, there is nothing I'm gonna do to you that I intend to be in any way bazaar, strange, weird or goofy. Uh, all I'm gonna do is ask you to focus and concentrate your attention on something and then we'll shift into that scene on, uh 96 and 61.

A: Okay.

Q: That's really all it is.

A: Okay.

Q: But the second point is - is that I could not. There's been some real good research done on this, and the research seems to show pretty darn definitely that not only do I not have any power, but I can't get you to do something you don't want. A person while in hypnosis can still say, you know, if someone said pick up that glass and throw it at that man over there. And you're not the kind of person that throws things at other people. Especially nice FBI agents and so you wouldn't do that just because I asked you to.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: You know, if I asked you to do something that you thought was sort of curious and kind of whimsical, but it didn't bother you to do it...

((0:31:00))

Q: ...then you might do it. You might have done it if - if we were just sitting here, and I asked you without hypnosis but you wouldn't do something - you might do something in other words if you were kind of curious or it seemed kind of silly. Maybe even be a little bit more comfortable doing hypnosis.

No. But you wouldn't do something that you didn't want to do. Another thing that some people are kind of concerned about is, if I go into hypnosis and I got to (unintelligible) out all of my deep, dark secrets? No. All we're gonna talk about this evening is what took place between 10 minutes past 9:00 and the time you turned on to whatever road it was off of 61 on the evening of November 5th.

A: Okay.

Q: And we're not gonna get into anything else and your private life is your private life and there's nothing about this.

A: It's actually pretty boring.

Q: That may be. What (unintelligible) exciting is yours and we're not (unintelligible). But some people are kind of worried that, uh, somehow going into hypnosis will, you know, just turn their mind to mush, you know, just talkin' babble and rambling on and that is not the case at all.

A: Okay.

((0:32:00))

Q: So hypnosis is, uh, going into a state of mind that you might find if you can do it is already familiar to you from some other situation. I'll give you another example about how hypnosis kind of happens in everyday life. People that are salesman over their truck drivers often you know will be driving along hour after hour in a snowstorm?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: At night with the headlights on?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And you know there's that place out there that look like a tiny spot where all those snowflakes are coming out from. Sort of like looking into a funnel and it comes from this little teeny place and fans out? Well if you keep watching that imaginary spot guess what? You probably get so involved in it you lose track of paying attention to the road your life would be in a ditch. So that's another example - everyday life of someone getting so absorbed and so concentrated on something that they lose awareness of what's going on around them. Uh, another example is some people will get so involved in a movie, or, uh, reading a book or watching something on television...

((0:33:00))

Q: ...that they feel like they lived it and they weren't aware of what was going on around them. So that's another example of sometimes people (unintelligible). I sometimes will go to a movie and I will feel like I lived that movie. Not all of it but sometimes. And that's because I'll go into a state of hypnosis while watching it. I get super absorbed in it. (Unintelligible).

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: So hypnosis is a state of mind in which somebody concentrates and focuses their attention which they do not lose control and no one else gains control. It's got to be a cooperative thing where if you are uncomfortable with me, if you don't like psychologists that wear red sweaters or something I've said or not said that puts you off, then you're gonna be a little bit more leary of doing this than you would otherwise be and that's understandable. And that's why I'm trying to take the time to explain it to you so you get a feeling for me and how I explain things and hopefully that will make you feel at ease.

((0:34:00))

Q: Um, and hypnosis is not a situation in which you would either blurt things out or, um, do things that were against your will. Now hypnosis is a situation in which a person may experience a couple of things. One most people when they are in hypnosis feel at least a little bit of relaxation, and if we put a blood pressure cuff on you, you know, like a nursing does when you go for a physical exam, we'd probably see a little bit of drop in your blood pressure.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: A little bit. Your heart rate would probably drop just a little bit. And, um, the conductance of your skin, the electrical conductance of your skin would probably drop just a little bit. All of those and your muscle tension would probably tend to drop just a little bit. And indeed sometimes people use hypnosis to help with tension headaches or mild muscle aches and things like that is sometimes helpful. That because hypnosis...

((0:35:00))

Q: ...seems to have at least a moderate to slight relaxation effect. Um, I guess that probably covers the waterfront. Oh, I'm sorry. There was one other thing and I lost track of it for a second. In hypnosis if anything a person has a little bit more of a tendency to give whatever answer comes into their mind. Uh, so for example if you had - instead of seeing what you saw, uh, suppose you'd been in a bank cashing a check and someone had come in to rob it and some,

uh, investigator asked you under hypnosis, "Did the robber have a revolver or an automatic in - pistol in his hand?" You'd probably be likely to answer one or the other even if you didn't see the robber's hand and you didn't know if he had a gun at all. You'd be a little bit more likely - or you'd be a little bit less likely not in hypnosis...

((0:36:00))

Q: ...to just go along with the question. So that's one of the reasons that it's real important for us to be taping this from beginning to end to show that the questions that I've asked and everything stays entirely within what you told me, and I'm not suggesting or bringing something in from the outside.

A: Okay.

Q: That's part of the reason for taping it.

A: Okay.

Q: Now does that leave you with any questions? What we - what we do from here if we do the usual kind of routine is I've got here as I mentioned to you just before we turn the tape on - I've got here a release form which I'll read out loud in a second so that it's on the camera - the tape and I'll let you look at it and make sure that it says what I said it says. And, um, what this basically says is that you consent to try hypnosis. That's basically all it says and that you consent to having the tape recording made. Um, and then we try hypnosis and see if you are hypnotizable...

((0:37:00))

Q: And I'll take you through, uh, 5 at the most 10 minute oral procedure which is one of about 10 zillion ways I know to try this. The most straightforward and least hocus pocus. I don't have a watch or not gonna put on a peeked hat, you know, or a - or a robe or anything. And, um, see how hypnotizable you are. So that'd be the next step. So I'll let you read this and you can look at it or look at it while I'm reading it if you want. It says hypnosis consent form. I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis and be interviewed under hypnosis to assist, and you can fill in your investigation - to assist the Federal Bureau of Investigation with an investigation it is conducting.

((0:38:00))

Q: I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview and that this videotape may be used for any lawful purpose connected with the investigation or any subsequent action based on the investigation. And indeed

the FBI is the one that keeps the tape. Dr. John Rhetts - that's me, a licensed consulting psychologist. That's the fancy title the state of Minnesota gives me. Has explained the procedures to be used during the course of this hypnosis session and any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction. The purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my - my memory in recalling the following. Uh, the license plate number of a car I saw, uh, after 9:10 pm on November...

((0:39:00))

A: Actually, you know, the time was - that's when I left, um, 9:10.

Q: Was when you left the house?

A: Was I - when I left the house. Actually I figure around the time that I saw the car was - it takes about 25 minutes to get home and I was in that area. So I think it was between - I'm discussing here. Maybe 25 after to about 20 to. Because I think I got home at quarter to 10:00.

Q: Okay, in other words you saw it after 9:10 to 9:25?

A: Yeah, well and that 9 (unintelligible).

Q: 9:25 on...

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay, after 9:25 pm on November 5th.

A: Okay.

Q: Are you comfortable with that?

A: Yes, I am.

Q: Okay, then, uh, let me put in the date which is November 15, 1989. And...

((0:40:00))

Q: ...you sign right there where it says interviewee.

A: Okay.

Q1: The audio is coming across okay. Much better than...

Q: And then Dee can sign this. As a witness down there. Last one.

Q1: I'll be on tape myself here.

Q: Yep. Okay, now I get to sign. Now I forgot to put in the, uh, place which is Wayzata, Minnesota. Police Station in Wayzata. I said that (unintelligible).

Q1: We're in Wayzata Police Department.

Q: That's correct.

((0:41:00))

Q1: Do we get Theresa's, uh, full name and address?

A: Oh.

Q1: Again, if we could maybe get that now too if we didn't get that earlier.

A: Well my name is Theresa Marie Godfrey and I live in White Bear Lake at 2471 Orchard Lane.

Q1: (Unintelligible) thank you.

Q: All right. Um, well the next thing is should we find out if you're hypnotizable since that's one of the major things (unintelligible)?

A: Yeah, right.

Q: Okay, let's do exactly that. Now what I'm gonna do with you for the next few minutes Theresa is - or do you prefer to be called Terry or Theresa or what?

A: Call me Terry.

Q: Call me Terry. I'm John.

A: Okay.

Q: Um, is I'm going to, um, talk - talk you through, um, going into hypnosis and we'll just find out how well that works for you. Um, there are a whole bunch of different ways to try this so if this first way doesn't work...

((0:42:00))

Q: ...or somehow bothers you or puts you off for any reason, we can try a different way.

A: Okay.

Q: And, um, I - I want to tell you that, um, please don't feel like you have to do anything special just because you've come in. If nothing - if - if it doesn't happen to, um, make it possible for you to remember any more of that license plate than you do now so be it. Cause I'm sure that you understand that if - if a person tries too hard then there is some tendency for them to make up something.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And that could be a totally false trail for the FBI to (unintelligible).

A: Okay.

Q: On the other hand if you think you're getting something but you're not sure, just label this I'm not sure. I sort of picture this or I can half see this. That's okay. So just - just say it exactly as you recall it.

A: Okay.

((0:43:00))

Q: That's when we get to a little later and we're doing hypnosis again. So what I'd like to do is - is take about 5 or 10 minutes here. Or I'll ask you would you like to take a break at this point or do you want to go ahead?

A: Just go ahead.

Q: Okay, that's fine. I just want to make sure...

A: My husband's headin' out of town tomorrow.

Q: Oh, okay. .

A: I'd like to see him before he (unintelligible).

Q: So what I'm gonna do is I'm gonna walk you through, uh, and ask you to concentrate and - and focus your attention on some ideas.

A: Okay.

Q: And, um, we'll just see how it goes. Um, do you wear contact lenses?

A: No.

Q: No? Okay, uh, and what I'd like to ask you to do is can you put your arms comfortably on the arms of the chair? Let me - let me just put this wire under your arm. I'm just gonna get it. There we go. And as you sit in that position would you one look up towards your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head and as you hold your eyes up slowly close your eye lids.

((0:44:00))

Q: Let your eyes close.

Man: (Unintelligible).

Q: I'll stop for a second. Let me say it looks like you're trying real, real hard. Are ya? You feeling a little tense?

A: Oh, yeah.

Q: Are ya?

A: Yeah, I'm tryin' hard.

Q: Okay, let me advise you to relax and don't try quite so hard.

A: Okay.

Q: What I'm asking you to do - I - I would like you to do it. Just as - as naturally rather than with a lot of strain and effort.

A: I thought you wanted them for me to force them to come out.

Q: No, no.

A: Okay.

Q: We can clarify and go over any of this along the way.

A: Okay.

Q: I don't want any of this to feel like a big strain.

A: Okay.

Q: And so if - either what I'm saying doesn't feel very natural then you can tell me that. Or if it does but you need to do it your way do it your way and don't worry about how exactly the way you think I might be asking.

A: Okay.

Q: All right. Go - go stay - stay within yourself and comfortable.

A: Okay.

((0:45:00))

Q: Good. Now start over again one look up toward your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head, two holding your eyes up just close your eye lids. Three take a deep breath. Let it out and let your eyes relax. And I'd like you to concentrate on an idea and a sensation of floating. I'd like you to imagine that you can begin to feel a light, floating sensation in your body as if you could float right up off the chair or right down through the chair. I'd just like you to concentrate on the idea of floating, of lightness and as you concentrate on this feeling of floating I'm gonna concentrate on your left hand and arm.

((0:46:00))

Q: In a minute I'm going to stroke the middle finger of your left hand. And after I do you will begin to feel little tiny restless movements in that finger and these little restless movements will spread to the other fingers of your hand, making your left hand feel light and buoyant and you can let it float upwards. Ready? First one finger and then another. And as these little restless movements develop your left hand begins to feel light and floating and you can just let it float upward bending at the elbow so it just floats into an upright position. And this is an exercise in your imagination. And I'd like you to imagine that your left hand is feeling lighter and lighter as if it had float...

((0:47:00))

Q: ...and you can just let if float right up off the arm and the chair and slowly, easily you are gonna come into an upright position. And you're gonna help it get started. Light, floating.

Man: (Unintelligible).

Q: And I'm gonna stop for a second and ask you a question. Does the idea of your hand and arm floating uncomfortable to you?

Man: (Unintelligible) he sat down...

A: It just feels good there.

Q: It feels good there?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Would you like it to just stay there?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, then I'm gonna switch the idea about asking you to think about it. And I want you to just focus on the...

((0:48:00))

A: ...idea of being relaxed. As if your whole body is just relaxing and as you do you begin to feel as though you just wouldn't want right now to bother to try to move for anything. You know how sometimes when you just settle into a comfortable chair or a couch you just don't feel like moving? Well that's how your body can begin to feel. As though it is so pleasantly heavy and it's almost beginning to feel wooden or made out of lead. And of course you could move if you really, really wanted to, but for the next few minutes you just don't feel like (unintelligible) and you arms are...

((0:49:00))

A: ...feeling heavy and heavier and it's just so relaxing. As if you just couldn't even move 'em almost as if - even if you wanted to. Peaceful, quiet, sensational. And indeed in a few minutes after I give you the signal for your eyes to open you'll find that your left hand is still so heavy that you can't even move, and you may find something pleasant and amusing and kind of funny and curious about this sensation. Later when I touch...

((0:50:00))

A: ...your left elbow your usual sensation and control will return. Now in a moment I'm going to jump backwards, and when I reach the count of 2 you can let your eyes look upward with your eye lids closed and when I reach the count of 1 you can let your eyes open. Ready, 3, 2, roll your eyes up, 1, let them open. As you sit in this position tell me what physical sensations you are aware of. Do you feel comfortable?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Do you feel any unusual sensation of any kind?

((0:51:00))

Q: For example, would you raise your right hand for a second? Good. Now put your right arm down. Now can you raise your left hand?

A: Doesn't want to go up.

Q: Doesn't want to go up. Are you surprised?

A: I think you told me it would too.

Q: Right. You are absolutely correct. I did. Does it bother you when it can't go up?

A: No.

Q: Okay, now I'd like you to make a fist with your left hand. Can you just make a fist with your left hand? That's right. Squeeze it now. Relax it. Now can you raise your left hand? Yeah. So you have your usual sensation and control again don't you?

((0:52:00))

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And you can see that that hypnotic effect that was in your left hand has changed?

A: Yeah.

Q: You have your usual control don't you?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Do you have any idea what made that hypnosis go away?

A: Yeah, you said you were gonna do something to the back of my elbow.

Q: And did I do that?

A: Yeah, you did.

Q: You're right. I did. That's exactly right. That's what I said and that's what I did. And you're absolutely correct.

A: Okay, thank you. I'm tired.

Q: That might be the answer. Are you feeling kind of relaxed?

A: Yeah.

Q: Are you, uh, does that surprise you how relaxed you feel?

A: My...

Q: Yeah, okay.

A: I know you told me to open my eyes (unintelligible).

Q: Well, um, I can see that we're gonna have to tell you not to go into hypnosis on your way home or you might go to sleep on your way home in the car.

((0:53:00))

Q: Now can you make the effort to let your eyes open? And sit up? Maybe if you just move around a little bit. Maybe at the end of this we can give you another little break - be more relaxed.

A: Sure. I should have that before I go to bed.

Q: Well you can do that before you go to bed. If we have a minute before you leave this evening I'll give you a couple tips.

A: I'll have to take you home with me to do that.

Q: Nope. That's the interesting thing is it's all here.

A: That's neat.

Q: I don't have - I don't have any special power.

A: You know the thing is is I - I wanted to almost prove it, but you know what it just felt so good who cares? Is that what this is about?

Q: You have shown that you clearly are a hypnotizable person because when was the last time your hand felt so heavy or glued to the arm of the chair that it just didn't want to go up. Have you ever felt that before?

A: I just didn't want to move it.

Q: That's right. You felt...

((0:54:00))

A: I didn't want to move it. It felt good.

Q: And yet you moved it that way.

A: This is really silly.

Q: As a matter of fact that is what hypnosis is all about because all I did is ask you to concentrate on an idea right - an idea that at first we thought it was going to be floating, but the floating wasn't working either.

A: Do you know what? I heard everything you were saying.

Q: Oh, yeah. That's what I'm getting.

A: Oh.

Q: There is no reason in the world why a person who is either going into or is in hypnosis or is coming back out shouldn't hear everything that is said. Some people have what you'd call amnesia and they don't remember. But I would have to say most people remember either everything or at least the jist of everything that was said. So what I could have said to you earlier when I was talking about hypnosis in general is I could have said hypnosis is not at all like sleep. Some people think hypnosis is like sleep where you're - your sort of go unconscious.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Not necessarily at all.

A: Wow.

((0:55:00))

Q: So I asked you to concentrate on an idea and by golly it worked. Your hand felt really, really heavy.

A: Oh, great.

Q: Yep. And the only reason that that happened was because I asked you to concentrate on an idea. And I told you then later on when I touched your elbow your usual sensation and control returned. Right? And when I touched your elbow boom.

A: Yeah.

Q: So that's hypnosis. Where the idea that somebody presents you if you can get absorbed in it it seems like it's real. And we didn't really glue your hand to that chair did we?

A: No you didn't. I mean I would have - no I would have really had to force it. It felt so good there that it would have been a little work to get it up.

Q: So what I've learned here in the last 5 minutes is that although the idea of floating wasn't a very effective idea, the idea...

((0:56:00))

Q: ...of relaxing and heaviness is a real effective feeling for you. You can really get in to that. So.

A: It felt like I was going to tip over in my chair (unintelligible).

Q: Okay, I'd like to take about a two or three minute break. I want a drink of water and you can get up and stretch a little and then we'll come back and - oh, you turned it off. We'll come back and we'll use hypnosis now to go back to the night of November.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay?

A: Okay.

Q: Let me unclip (unintelligible).

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Oh, the time is, uh, 8:12. Okay, it's 8:16, uh, still on the evening of Monday the 13th of November. We're in Wayzata Police Station. I'm sure you can

tell from the background, and, uh, Theresa Godfrey, John Rhetts and Dee Levine are all here in the room again just like we were before.

Q1: I'm still here.

Q: Good. Now having had a drink of water let's us, uh, make use of the same...

((0:57:00))

Q: ...kind of experience you just had when we had the hypnosis. I'll, uh, use the same kind of thing and after it seems like you got more relaxed what I'm gonna do is I'm gonna ask you to imagine that time - yes, that would be easier. There we go. (Unintelligible) under your arm and out of your way so. Um, after it seems like you're - you're relaxed and so forth. Heavy and wooden. Um, I'll ask you to imagine that time is going backwards and backwards to the night of November 5th. And you're driving from, uh, your job on the way home and, um, then we'll focus on what you saw.

A: Okay.

((0:58:00))

Q: And, uh, as I said before, uh, please don't feel like you have to remember anything new. Don't try to force anything. If you - if you see something but you- you're not real positive about it just say I'm not sure but I think what I can picture is or whatever way it comes to you.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay? Now just before we go on having now tried hypnosis are there any questions or anything like that that you'd like to ask? Because if there are I'd be glad to try to answer them.

A: No, I trust you guys.

Q: You feel comfortable with what we've done so far?

A: Yep.

Q: Good. Okay, well that's certainly one of the things we're trying to do is to make it a - a comfortable experience. All right, well let's go through the same kind of thing we've been in before. We'll go into hypnosis and then I'll direct your attention backwards to - back to November 5th.

A: Okay.

Q: So, 1, look up towards your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head, 2, two holding your eyes up close your eyelids.

((0:59:00))

Q: Three take a deep breath, exhale and imagine that you - and you let your eyes relax. I want you to imagine that just as a few minutes ago you can feel yourself relaxing. As if as you sit in that chair your body is just relaxing. The tension is going to come and your arms and your hands and your shoulders are relaxing. Your knees and your feet are relaxing. Your whole body is relaxing. And as you relax your body just feels heavier and heavier and of course if you really wanted to you could move it. You could move your hands or your arms or your feet, but for the next few minutes you can just be quiet and peaceful...

((0:60:00))

Q: ...and relaxed. And as you concentrate on my voice, what I'm saying I want you to imagine that you can see in front of you a clock and this clock has the very unusual property of not only do the hands go forward to show that time is going forward, but the hands on this clock can go backwards to mark time going backwards. And as you look at this clock Terry the hands on the clock start to turn backwards. And time is going backwards and minutes are growing into hours and the hours into days and it's no longer the 13th of November. It's now the 12th. And the 12th becomes the 11th. And the time is going backwards to the 10th...

((0:61:00))

Q: ...and the 9th and the 8th and the 7th and the 6th and the 5th. We're back to the 5th of November. And it's in the evening. It's after 9 o'clock and you're driving home from your job. You're driving home and as you're driving along route 49 to 96 you come up behind a car. A car that seems to you to be driving kind of extra cautiously. Going kind of slow but overcautious driver you think to yourself. And as you are behind that...

((0:62:00))

Q: ...car you're sitting up kind of high because you're in a van. Then you can look down and your headlights are high enough up that you can see into the back of the car in front of you. Now how many people do you see in the back of that car? Or in front - how many people do you see through the back window of that car?

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Can you tell me how many people you see through the back window of the car? Terry?

((0:63:00))

Q: Terry?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Can you see into the back of the car that you're driving by?

A: I can't see it here.

Q: You can't see it here?

A: Uh-uh.

Q: What are you seeing?

A: Um, kind of dark.

Q: Uh-huh. And where are you right now?

A: Trying to get on that road that you told me to go on.

Q: Okay, that's fine. You can take your time to get there.

Man: (Unintelligible).

((0:64:00))

Man: (Unintelligible).

Q: Are you on 96 yet? Heading towards White Bear?

A: I can't see it in my eyes.

Q: I'm not sure, but maybe you don't have to see it. Maybe you can just remember it. Can you just remember it? Like see it in your mind?

A: There's two of them there.

Q: Uh-huh. And what do the two look like?

A: A man driving.

Q: Uh-huh.

((0:65:00))

A: He's - a kid over in a corner.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: He not movin'.

Q: Hm. Does that worry you or does that look okay to you?

A: Uh-uh. He's just sittin' there.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: He's way up against the door.

Q: Right up against the door, huh?

A: Yep.

Q: Can you see anything that he's wearing?

A: He's got something on his head.

Q: Something on his head.

((0:66:00))

Q: And what happens next?

A: He's talking.

Q: He's talking?

A: No, the man.

Q: Uh-huh, a man is talking.

A: He's not looking over at him.

Q: And how can you tell the man is talking?

A: He's turning just a little bit.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: He's looking up in the mirror.

Q: He keeps looking up in the mirror. So that means he's looking where - at you?

((0:67:00))

A: Yeah. And I see that kid movin'.

Q: So are you wondering why that kid is moving?

((0:68:00))

Q: And what happens next?

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: Got something.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: Got something?

A: That man.

Q: The man did? Okay.

A: He (unintelligible).

Q: Can you see what it is?

((0:69:00))

A: It's the end of a pipe.

Q: Looks like the end of a pipe. Where does he have it?

A: In his right hand.

Q: In his right hand. What is he doing with it?

A: He's holding the steering wheel.

Q: He's holding it and he's steering.

A: He's holding it down (unintelligible).

Q: Uh-huh. Well what do you think as you see that?

A: (Unintelligible).

((0:70:00))

A: A gun.

Q: Looks like a gun?

A: Looks like the end of a gun.

Q: Huh, looks like the end of a gun.

A: I just see that kid moving over there.

Q: Mm-hm. How are you feeling as you're watching this?

A: Worried about the kid.

Q: You're worried about the kid?

A: He doesn't move.

Q: Mm-hm. He doesn't move.

((0:71:00))

Q: And what happens next?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Look at the license plate?

A: The license plate.

Q: Mm-hm, what does it say?

((0:72:00))

A: (Unintelligible). Which way is he going? Speeding up.

Q: He's speeding up?

((0:73:00))

A: He's gonna turn.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: So he's going the same way now as you are again. Is that right?

A: He's gonna turn. Speed up, the plate.

Q: Speed up?

A: (Unintelligible) the plate.

Q: Uh-huh, and what do you say? Do you say what's on the plate to yourself?

A: Yes.

Q: What do you say?

((0:74:00))

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: (Unintelligible).

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: Letters.

Q: Uh-huh, letters. What letters are on it?

((0:75:00))

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

((0:76:00))

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: Can you say the letters out loud that you were saying to yourself?

A: There's a bunch of letters and numbers. (Unintelligible).

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

((0:77:00))

A: I got to remember them.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Hm?

A: Both letters.

Q: Uh-huh. Can you say them?

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

((0:78:00))

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Can you say the letters or the numbers or both out loud?

A: I'm not sure.

Q: Okay.

A: (Unintelligible) T-P.

Q: T-P?

A: D-P. Uh, there's so many, sorry.

((0:79:00))

Q: And do you see any of the numbers?

A: 2 - 4 over (unintelligible).

Q: Over and over?

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

A: Some of them are coming back.

Q: Some of them are coming back?

((0:80:00))

A: (Unintelligible) back.

Q: Can you picture yourself being behind that car and you look at the license plate, and you're trying to remember the letters and the numbers on that license plate? And I think you said - you say them to yourself. You repeat them several different times.

A: Yeah.

Q: It's like you're saying them to yourself...

((0:81:00))

Q: Can you hear your voice saying it to yourself?

A: Over and over.

Q: Pardon?

A: And over and over.

Q: Uh-huh. And can you hear your voice saying what the letters and the numbers are in your mind?

A: Yeah, they are there.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: But they're jumbled.

Q: They're jumbled?

A: Yeah.

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

((0:82:00))

Dispatch: (Unintelligible).

Q: Where are the letters and numbers when they are all jumbled? Are they in your mind or on the license plate?

A: Uh, the - I can't remember.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: Sequence.

Q: Okay, do you remember - even if you don't remember the sequence do you remember any of the specific letters or specific numbers?

A: A D.

Q: A D?

A: A D. And a T.

Q: And a T. And a T.

A: And a T. (Unintelligible).

((0:83:00))

A: I don't know. He's starting to say yes. That's (unintelligible).

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I'm tryin' to remember, but it's hard.

Q: And is that a joke that you made to yourself in the car?

A: Yeah.

Q: In the van?

A: Yeah. Because I couldn't remember the - the dang thing.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: A truck pulled up.

Q: And do you think it had a T and a P?

A: I don't know. It was D. A D and a T I think?

Q: A D and a T?

A: Yeah, and a T.

Q: Okay.

A: Or maybe a P too.

((0:84:00))

Q: And maybe a P.

A: I'm not real sure.

Q: Okay, you're not real sure. I understand.

A: I just (unintelligible) again. A P and A T.

Q: And how about any numbers? Can you see or hear yourself say any of the numbers?

A: Yeah. (Unintelligible).

Q: There are two of them there?

((0:85:00))

A: (Unintelligible) there's a 2 in there.

Q: There are two of them there?

A: I think there's a 2 in there.

Q: A 2 in there, okay.

A: (Unintelligible).

((0:88:00))

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: I know you're not sure and I really understand you are trying very hard to get it as clear in your mind as you can and you're doing good, hard work.

A: Okay. I want...

Q: Now I want to ask you to say the letters again in as strong a voice as you can.

A: D, P, T, 2, 8, 5.

Q: D, P, T, 2, 8 5. Is that correct?

A: There's not much comin' is there?

Q: Okay.

A: I don't know what to say.

((0:89:00))

Q: That's okay.

A: I don't know. It's really (unintelligible) in.

Q: And you've worked real hard and you've done your very best and we really, really appreciate it. And we know you're not positive, but we can try to find out if this might be the license plate number.

A: Okay.

Q: So now as you relax now you can let your mind just go to the idea of the clock again. You can see the clock and the hands on the clock start to turn forward. And time is starting to go forward. And the minutes grow into hours and the hours...

((0:90:00))

Q: ...grow into days. And it's no longer November 5th, it's now November 6th, November 7th, November 8th, November 9, November 10, November 11, November 12, November 13. We're back to the evening of November 13, Monday evening. And in a few moments I'm going to count backwards from

3 and you can follow along - 3, get ready, 2, roll your eyes up, 1, let them open. And you can move your hand.

A: This is so comfortable.

Q: You don't want to let go do you?

((0:91:00))

A: No. (Unintelligible) this is comfortable.

Q: Well, I'll tell ya something. I'm gonna teach you before you go home tonight...

A: Na, na.

Q: The truth of the matter now is we kind of thought in the beginning that you'd gone to sleep.

A: You know what? I - I needed a Kleenex. I remember my nose was dripping. Except I just went...

Q: Here's a paper towel. It's the best I can do.

A: Oh, you know what I finally said some number but I hope they're right. Oh God.

Q: You were very clear with us but you weren't sure.

A: Oh.

Q: What was coming into your mind and that's the best that you can do.

A: (Unintelligible) my card. Wouldn't that be horrible?

((0:92:00))

Q: The, uh, the police can check it out very easily. If it belonged to your van and it's listed in your name.

A: My God.

Q: You made a mistake. (Unintelligible) but we did think at the very beginning that you'd actually gone to sleep.

A: I sure felt like it for a why.

Q: (Unintelligible) was very deep and did you remember when I reached over and touched your hand?

A: Uh-uh.

Q: I - I needed to do that to see if you were with us or whether you were asleep.

A: Was I with you?

Q: Yes, as a matter of fact you said I'm - I'm trying to picture - I'm trying to get on the road that you told me to be on.

A: I must be hypnoble. Not hypnoble.

Q: Yes. You're definitely hypnotizable.

A: It sure was comfortable.

Q: Well that's good.

A: Thank you.

Q1: You can have a Kleenex.

A: Oh.

Q1: You don't have to use paper towels.

A: That's what I brought from home.

Q: Now I'm curious. Sitting here now a few moments later do you have any recollection of what - can you remember what numbers and letters were coming into your mind?

A: Yeah, I said D, P, T, 2, 8, 5. I think I said that.

((0:93:00))

Q: That's what I heard.

A: Yeah.

Q: So I was just curious.

A: I just couldn't get up so I feel asleep. God, do people do this until they both fall asleep?

Q: They never have because hypnosis and sleep are real different. But I've had people be so relaxed. I often use it for relaxing.

A: I was so relaxed I didn't want to come out of it.

Q: Yep.

A: That is so - I mean I knew what you were saying but cool. God.

Q: (Unintelligible) too much fun.

A: Oh, boy.

Q: Well my impression is is that for right now that's about as clear and sharp a recollection as we're gonna be able to get through Terry and that, uh, unless there's anything that anybody feels the need to say. I'll say this, uh, 8:53. It's still a Monday evening...

((0:94:00))

Q: ...and, uh, are you comfortable with what we did?

A: Yeah.

Q: I mean I know you're relaxed but...

A: I hate to see what that looks like on video. God.

Q: (Unintelligible).

A: Maybe someday I'll see it, huh.

Q1: If you really, really want to you sure can but other than that it will probably never be shown.

A: Yeah.

Q: Maybe Saturday Night Live.

A: Must have been pretty funny watching me.

Q: I'm kidding.

A: Oh, well. You do what you have to do.

Q: So, 8:54 Monday evening the 13th and we'll sign off.

((0:95:00))

((0:96:00))

((0:97:00))

((0:98:00))

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

This will be a Statement of , spelled , , Address is , , . Questions are being asked by Special Agent Terry Duma, of the Minnesota Bureau of Criminal Apprehension, the Date is November 14, 1989. The place of questions are at residence, located at the previous listed address.

TD: First of all , were talking about a incident that took place on the 29th of October, 1989, which would of been a Sunday, is that correct?

NH: Yea

TD: and, this took place about 11:00 in the morning?

NH: yea

TD: okay, and were talking about a incident in which you were approached by an individual, a white male, is that correct?

NH: yep

TD: and this would of been in the area of the entrance to Stoney Brook Park?

NH: yea

TD: could you repeat to me what you previously told me, you first seen this individual where?

NH: at the pop machines

TD: by the pop machines?

NH: yea

TD: what was the first thing that attracted your attention to him?

NH: I noticed him from the paper, I recognized him from the paper

TD: and, you recognized him from the paper, meaning what? A picture of him in the paper?

NH: yea

TD: what did the picture depict?

NH: brown hair, but his glasses were on the back ....

TD: okay, let's go back to the pop machine. He was standing at the pop machine to the entrance?

NH: yea

TD: okay, and you recognized him, or thought you recognized him from a picture in the paper?

NH: yea

TD: what did the picture consist of, was this a notice of some type in the paper?

NH: yea

TD: involving who?

NH: hum, this guy that thought they seen him and Jacob running away

TD: had to do with the Jacob Wetterling Case?

NH: yea

TD: okay, so when you approached the pop machines was there anything spoken between you and him?

NH: no

TD: or did he ask you a question?

NH: well the first question was when, hum...what my name was? and well, if I knew Jacob Wetterling

TD: what did you say? Was that the first question he asked you? "Did you know Jacob Wetterling?"

NH: yea

TD: and what did you say?

NH: no

TD: did you say anything else?

NH: I don't know him, but I know that he's been abducted and the guy laughed

TD: the guy laughed?

TD: okay, let's go back to the pop machine. He was standing at the pop machine to the entrance?

NH: yea

TD: okay, and you recognized him, or thought you recognized him from a picture in the paper?

NH: yea

TD: what did the picture consist of, was this a notice of some type in the paper?

NH: yea

TD: involving who?

NH: hum, this guy that thought they seen him and Jacob running away

TD: had to do with the Jacob Wetterling Case?

NH: yea

TD: okay, so when you approached the pop machines was there anything spoken between you and him?

NH: no

TD: or did he ask you a question?

NH: well the first question was when, hum...what my name was? and well, if I knew Jacob Wetterling

TD: what did you say? Was that the first question he asked you? "Did you know Jacob Wetterling?"

NH: yea

TD: and what did you say?

NH: no

TD: did you say anything else?

NH: I don't know him, but I know that he's been abducted and the guy laughed

TD: the guy laughed?

NH: yea

TD: kay, anything else, did he ask any other questions?

NH: um, he asked me what my name was, and I said and he asked me how old I was, and I said , and then he asked me where I lived, and I said I'm not going to tell you, and then he said you better tell me, I said I don't want too. Then I seen, that was when I seen a boy that looked like Jacob Wetterling in the car

TD: in the car or pickup?

NH: pickup

TD: okay, was the boy sitting in the pickup

NH: yea

TD: and what was the boy wearing?

NH: red jacket, and some kind of orange, or yellow sweater

TD: okay, and what else?

NH: brown hair, the driver had a scratch right there

TD: scratch on his ...

NH: on his left cheek

TD: on his left cheek?

NH: cause he was looking out the window, and I seen it

TD: he was looking out which window now?

NH: the passenger side

TD: the passenger side?

NH: yea

TD: and you were on what side of the pickup?

NH: I was on the passenger side

TD: passenger side?

NH: yea, left

TD: okay, and where was the individual at?

NH: he was at the pop machines

TD: and on the left side of the vehicle also?

NH: yea

TD: did the boy say anything to you, that was sitting in the car?

NH: no

TD: what about the man after you told him you didn't have to tell him where you lived?

NH: I just ran away, cause he grabbed my shirt, and then I got away from him, cause otherwise

TD: he grabbed you shirt?

NH: yea, then I just ran away from him, cause he couldn't catch me, and then some guy was coming down the street and he was coming in, and the guy thought he probably was going to be recognized, so he got in the car really fast, and he zoomed out of here, and went that way

TD: which way did he go?

NH that way

TD: South?

NH: yea

TD: down 13th Street there?

NH: yea

TD: and this was a dark blue pickup?

NH: yea

TD: and you stated previously that it had some rust on it?

NH: yea, at the bottom

TD: okay, do you recall what type of make of it was or anything?

NH: it had a just a F on the...at the back, but it didn't have any other words on it

TD: just a "F"?

NH: yea

TD: was this on a tailgate?

NH: it was in the back, a gate thing

TD: okay, but you didn't see the rest of it?

NH: no

TD: did you see the license plate?

NH: I didn't get his license plate, cause he got away to fast

TD: okay, did you see what the license plate looked like though?

NH: I don't think it had a license plate on it

TD: and the pickup didn't have a toper on it or anything?

NH: no

TD: okay, did the boy inside the vehicle, inside the pickup I should say, did he make any movements to get out of the pickup or anything?

NH: he was looking around the park, seeing if he could get out

TD: you think he was trying to get out of the pickup?

NH: he wanted to

TD: how do you know?

NH: cause he was looking around suspiciously, wishing that he could probably get, wanted to get out

TD: did you see his hands?

NH: yea, they were at like this, I think, kind of tied I think

TD: you think they were tied?

NH: yea, they kinda looked like it, they were

TD: did you see them?

NH: yea

TD: through the window?

NH: yea

TD: okay, what does this man look like now, that talked to you?

NH: brown short hair, his hair kind of looked like a wig too, and but he didn't have his glasses on, he had, they were on the dash of the truck

TD: you seen them?

NH: yea

TD: were they glasses like mine? or were they sun glasses?

NH: they were glasses, but not sun glasses, brown things

TD: okay, how tall do you think the man was?

NH: six foot

TD: how tall do you think I am?

NH: seven

TD: pardon?

NH: seven

TD: seven foot?

NH: he was a little shorter

TD: a little short than me?

NH: yea

TD: I'm not six foot though ..... Do you remember what kind of clothes he had on?

NH: Coca-cola shirt, and red sweat pants

TD: Coca-cola shirt?

NH: yea

TD: and red sweat pants?

NH: and no jacket though

TD: pardon?

NH: no jacket though

TD: okay, a Coca-cola shirt, does it say Coca-cola on it?

NH: yea

TD: on the front?

NH: yea

TD: what about the back of it?

NH: I didn't see anything, all it was, was red

TD: and that was what color?

NH: huh?

TD: what color was his shirt?

NH: red

TD: red?...short sleeve or long sleeve?

NH: long sleeve

TD: and the pants were what color?

NH: red

TD: red sweat pants?

NH: yea

TD: okay, what about his shoes?

NH: I think they were like these or something

TD: Nikki?

NH: I don't know I didn't really see his shoes

TD: okay, did the boy say anything at the time?

NH: I thought I heard him say something but I don't remember what

TD: do you think you would recognize that man again if you seen him?

NH: yea

TD: okay, was there anybody else in the area at the time?

NH: no

TD: I'm gonna show you some pictures, I'll turn the recorder off, and I'm gonna show you some pictures, and see if any of them look similar to that man, okay?

NH: yea

TD: , after reviewing the photo's here, you picked out this individual here with the glasses on?

NH: yea

TD: and his hair was down like that, is that correct?

NH: yea

TD: have you ever see him before in the papers or anything?

NH: yea

TD: but you feel the man at that pop machine was this same one?

NH: yea, kinda looked like him

TD: without his glasses on though?

NH: yea, he had a mustache right there

TD: he had a mustache?

NH: yea

TD: and you state...

NH: but it was a little thinner

TD: smaller than that, okay, but you state that those glasses that were lying on the dash board were the same as what's depicted in this picture?

NH: yea, they kind of look like it, I think they were though

TD: okay, so you came home after he attempted to get you in the vehicle and reported this to your mother?

NH: yea

TD: and your mother reported, eventually reported it to the police department, is that correct?

NH: yea

TD: okay, lets go back to the boy that was in the pickup, what color red jacket was that?

NH: dark

TD: dark red?

NH: yea

TD: did it have any markings on it?

NH: yea, I think so, it was black and white right there

TD: black and white on the sleeves

NH: yea, right there

TD: okay, and you said he had what type of shirt on?

NH: orange, a plain old sweatshirt thing?

TD: orange in color?

NH: yea

TD: Do you recall seeing his jeans?

NH: no, all I seen was his head and his jacket

TD: okay, and you say that the jacket was bright red in color

NH: yea

TD: and you seen his arms and they appear to be tied up, tied together?

NH: yea

TD: okay, and this was...he showed his arms to you through the window?

NH: yea

5/2600

TD: approximately how far were you away, do you recall?

NH: no

TD: lets use the same relation to this room that were sitting in here, in the kitchen to your living room, closer than that or farther than that?

NH: the truck was right there, something like that, and I was standing way over by the pop machines and I seen some brown thing on his hands

TD: you seen some brown thing on his arms?

NH: yea

TD: okay, is there anything else you were like to add to this?

NH: no

TD: okay, I thank you , and this concludes this statement, the same people present the dates the same, the time now is 4:05 PM.

INTERVIEW WITH ILENE SKILLINGSTAD

Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=Special Agent Dee Levine
A=Ilene Skillingstad

Q: Good afternoon. I'm Dr. John Rhetts and do you get the clock in the upper corner there? I'll move it down or something if we need it.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Okay, but at any rate it's about 12:38 on my watch on the afternoon of, uh, Tuesday evening the 21st of November and, uh, I'm Dr. John Rhetts - a licensed consulting psychologist. And you are?

A: Ilene Skillingstad.

Q: And, uh, special agent Dee Levine is in the background. I was just going to leave that there.

Q1: Okay.

Q: I wanted to explain very quickly to Ilene what the general outline of what we're going to do this afternoon is, so she can decide whether she wants to have some lunch or whatever and when.

Q1: Okay.

Q: And so we wanted to get that on tape so that there was no question. You are aware that we're tape recording and for the time being that's okay with you. We're going to go into more what would be done with the tape and all that in a little bit. But basically this kind of an interview generally has about three chapters to it.

((0:01:00))

Q: Chapter 1 is I who know nothing about where you've been, what you've seen, why you're even here, except that I know that you're cooperating with the FBI. Um, I need to find out from you before we do any hypnosis or anything

else just what you saw, and that way I have your version straight from you and I don't ask any leading questions.

A: Okay.

Q: That's real important in terms of gathering information. Then - and we can take a break any, you know, we can take a rest or whatever at any time. The second chapter is, uh, talking about what hypnosis is and is not, answering any questions you have and then if you're comfortable trying to see how hypnotizable you are. And if you're very hypnotizable or even moderately hypnotizable, then it's probably worth going on to do chapter three. If you're not at all hypnotizable, then there's not much point in proceeding on with hypnosis is there? And we won't know until we try. And then chapter three would be - if you're hypnotizable then asking...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...you to go into a state of hypnosis which I will help you with, and go back over the events whatever they were that you saw or were involved in or whatever it was to see if that can add any detail, any specifics, whatever it is that could be helpful to the, uh, the agents and their investigation. So it's three chapters. We can take a break in case you're finding it effort - like it's taking a lot of effort we can take a break at any time. Uh, we can certainly take a break, you know, in, uh, 45 minutes and you can have some lunch and you can go have some lunch now. It's entirely up to you. And, uh, my experience is - is that if I'm trying to give you a very conservative estimate so that we - not a hurry up but kind of a full interview, you got to plan on three hours. Now often we're done in two or sometimes even one and a half. It kind of depends on the tempo at which people work so. That I don't know since we've just met. It's very hard for me to guess. So would you - would you like to - to...

((0:03:00))

Q: ...there's a perfectly decent restaurant downstairs. I had lunch there, uh, would you like to get some lunch now and take a little break or would you rather do a whole...

A: We probably could and then when we get started we could...

Q: It's entirely up to you.

A: That and (I need carbohydrates).

Q: Would you like to have some lunch now?

A: I guess that would be...

Q: All right, then let's do that - why don't we, uh, plan on taking a half hour or something which would put us about where we were going to start anyway.

A: Okay, very good.

A: Okay, all right.

Q: So, it's, uh, I now have 12:41. Hey, it's almost - it's about quarter past one on Tuesday afternoon the 21st of November.

Q1: Very good. You're right.

Q: The three of us are back in the room again. I'm Dr. John Rhetts and...

A: Ilene Skillingstad.

Q: And Dee Levine. He's in the background back behind the camera. And as we've said before we're taping this and you're okay with that. I want to just explain why. Um, in this kind of a situation where we're...

((0:04:00))

Q: ...uh, trying to find out under hypnosis what you recall - that's the ultimate goal here. Um, it's very important to be able to show either a judge or a jury or somebody else doing an investigation exactly what was done, so that we can show that no leading questions - no - so that we can show what was done.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And that's the reason for - for doing the, uh, videotape. And, um, a little bit later we'll go through a formal release form together, um, that gives the FBI formal permission, uh, to - to hold onto the tape. But we - we - do you want to see it now?

A: It doesn't matter.

Q: Let me just read to you. Because I always read this out loud so that it's on the tape. It says hypnosis - well here you look at that copy and I'll look at this copy. You can see that it says what I say it says. Says hypnosis consent form. I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis, and to be

interviewed...

((0:05:00))

Q: ...under hypnosis in order to assist and I'll fill in the Federal Bureau of Investigation with an investigation it is conducting. I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview, and that this videotape may be used for any lawful purpose connected with the investigation or any subsequent action based on the investigation. Dr. John Rhetts - a licensed consulting psychologist has explained the procedures to be used during the course of this hypnosis session. That's why I'm not asking you to sign it now, because I haven't done that. And any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction. The purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my memory in recalling the following. After you tell me wherever it was you were and you saw whatever it was you saw we'll put in some short description like that.

A: Okay.

Q: So basically after we've talked about what hypnosis is and answered any questions you then have then I'll ask if you're comfortable signing this.

A: Okay.

((0:06:00))

Q: All right. I'll put this back over here until we're ready. Are you having some technical problem over there.

Q1: I don't seem to be hearing through the headphones.

Q: Oh.

Q1: I can't.

Q: So that means we're not sure if the microphone's working right?

Q1: Yeah.

Q: Well keep listening there for a second. I'll jiggle this connection. Does that make any difference?

Q1: No.

Q: No?

Q1: Uh-huh.

Q: Can you tap your microphone? Tap it. There's no off/on switch. Let's see if, uh...

A: There is a connection.

Q: Yeah, there's a connection here. I'll just check it. Does this make any difference Dee?

Q1: No.

Q: Nope?

Q1: Um, is this, um, is there a headphone jack in there?

Q: It's not connected to that. It's coming right straight from around the wall and to you.

((0:07:00))

Q: That makes it possible. (Unintelligible). Uh, it was (unintelligible). The record mike is on.

Q1: Yes.

Q: (Unintelligible).

Q1: It could be working all this time and then this is just...

Q: Um, but we know the earphones were working earlier don't we?

Q1: Yes. Um. (Unintelligible).

Q: Here I know what I'll do. Let me have the earphones. I will make sure - I will protect them and radio here or something to see if that - let me have.

((0:08:00))

Q: Okay.

Q: (Unintelligible). I know these are workin'. What we don't know is whether the

- the microphone itself...

Q1: Right.

Q: Or the connection. Okay, we have a short interruption because a power switch got hit by mistake and we're back talking at 1:30. Um, he looked like he was in his 50's or 60's.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And then I was starting to ask if - if you - you're fairly comfortable that - that it was a Minnesota license plate because you think he would have recalled if it weren't.

A: Mm-hm, mm-hm.

Q: Was there anything else about the car that you could see? Any bumper stickers, any fenders dented or muddy or clear or...

A: Mm-mm, nothing that struck me.

Q: Okay.

A: You know, nothing out of the ordinary so.

Q: All right. Um, and you don't remember anything in particular about the license plate at this point?

((0:09:00))

Q: Do you have any sense of letters or number or anything?

A: Oh, some. But I, you know, I thought about it so hard. I just wonder how much of it I'm thinking about and coming up with because I've been, you know, scrutinizing over it.

Q: Sure.

A: I think there was a c in it but I don't, you know, again I just don't know that for sure.

Q: Mm-hm, would you hazard a guess as to where the c was?

A: I would say probably the first letter. If...

Q: Okay. And then...

A: And I think it was - I think the letters were before the numbers. You know, some license plates are the other way. But I - again I...

Q: That's fine. Impressions here are okay because that may be the best that - that, uh, your memory can allow you to recall. On the other hand please do be aware that, uh, and I would guess that you are already clear about this but making up something just to fill in the blank and a question.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: That won't necessarily lead to anything productive.

A: Mm-hm.

((0:10:00))

Q: But if you label something as I'm not sure. I don't know. Then it's still perfectly good...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Perfectly okay to go ahead and say what that is.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So feel free. Then - then, uh, so did you stop and look at the car and the man or did you do this as you were just walking by or what - what was your...

A: I'm - I suppose I prob- probably paused briefly be- just because, you know, he looked - the situation looked odd to me but I didn't stop and I didn't approach the car personally because I had my kids along. And I didn't know - I, you know, I didn't know what he was doing or what he was up to and I - I just kept moving but I - I did for sure look at the license plate as I walked by.

Q: Did he seem to be doing anything inside the car other than just staring at this boy?

A: I don't - I don't know that he was doing this again because I didn't approach the car but I thought to myself - I thought is that some pervert masturbating? Is what I thought when I walked by.

Q: Oh.

A: I thought, you know, he's looking at that boy and...

Q: Okay.

A: You know, I - I...

Q: Okay.

A: I didn't know.

((0:11:00))

Q: And then when you - when you came out of the public library.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Was the - were you walking towards the car?

A: You have to kind of turn to the right a little bit.

Q: Uh-huh, and so you walked past what part of the car or you were looking at what part of the car?

A: I would have come past on the - looking at the - the passenger side and then the front of the car.

Q: Okay, the passenger side and the front. Let me, uh, ask you if you will. I don't know if you have any artistic tendency, but draw something for me...

A: (Unintelligible) I assure you.

Q: ...crude, uh, kind of approximation so I can kind of just visualize.

A: Okay, this is the edge of the library coming down and then this is almost - it's almost like a little alley. There's some entryway...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...into a building here with some cars. And then along - this is a sidewalk that goes all along here, so you walk out of the front of the library and you come along here and here's where these benches are and the boy was sitting on one of these.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And then right - actually I drew those into the alley. This would be the alleyway then.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:12:00))

A: And then this along here is a series of parking stalls that are angled parking?

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And this first one is a handicapped and then the rest of them are metered.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And there's only about this many, you know, five or six or eight at the most.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And then the corner turns and there's, you know, a couple businesses along - along here.

Q: Right.

A: And I came out of the library here and the - the car was parked in this first stall.

Q: Yep.

A: This handicapped spot so I would have seen, you know, the passenger side and then the front of the car.

Q: Okay. And then you walked along this way.

A: I walked along here and my car was parked along here somewhere.

Q: Okay, all right. That helps me a lot otherwise I can't visualize what your...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...saying. And so he was looking - how was he sitting in the car to be looking at - the boy was on one of these benches over here, correct?

A: He had - he was looking to his right. He had to be looking to his right and I don't remember if he was sitting straight ahead in the car or if he was turned at all.

((0:13:00))

A: I don't remember that for sure.

Q: Maybe he would have been looking through the passenger's side window.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: At the boy, correct?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay. So he would have been looking across the yard, all right. Okay, I think I understand. So that probably concludes chapter one. Now I can later on ask you questions? Um, so let's shift gears and talk a little bit about hypnosis. Have you had any acquaintance with hypnosis before?

A: Only in the movies.

Q: Only in the movies. Well from your acquaintance in the movies does that leave you with any questions you'd like to ask at the outset or would you like to have me sort of give you a little bit of a context for what hypnosis is?

A: Go ahead.

Q: Okay, fine. Please feel free though to interrupt at any point if it raises a question for you. I'll try to respond to it. Um, hypnosis is, um, is something that's really in some ways hard to define with any scientific...

((0:14:00))

Q: ...precision because, um, hypnosis appears to be a - a, um, state of mind that some people can go into very intensely. Some people can't go into it at all. Most people can go into it a little bit. And it's a state of mind in which a person seems to be able to concentrate and focus their attention and yet at the same time they relax. So it's sort of like being relaxed and yet thinking about some one thing and not having a whole lot of other distractors...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...coming in. Um, the - one of the best analogies I know of is did you ever, uh,

as a kid take a magnifying class and go outdoors on a sunny day and burn a leaf or a piece of paper or something like that?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, so you know that if we take a - a real glass lens or plastic lens and we put it in the right relationship to something we can focus and concentrate the sun's rays.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: To make it hot. Well I don't know anybody who put a lens in their mind...

((0:15:00))

Q: ...but the metaphor is that, um, some people can concentrate and focus their attention like that down to some very focused spot, and other people can't do that at all and most people can do it at least a little bit. And that's what seems to help someone's memory in recalling something, um, if they can do that. So that's why hypnosis seems to be helpful in investigations where somebody did have - did see or at least has reason to think they saw something or heard something perhaps by concentrating and focusing their attention and excluding other considerations, they can get back to what they remember. And, uh, for some people hypnosis has such a profound relaxing sensation that, uh, it's - it's easy and pleasant for them to do it and it eliminates some of those distractors. So the two seem to go hand in hand. The concentrating seems to go hand in hand with the relaxing.

((0:16:00))

Q: Um, there are a couple things about hypnosis that whether it's from the movies or some of the more sensational books or whatever, that some people think that - that just is not correct. One thing for example is - is that if you go into hypnosis and I'm the person who's talking to you and - and making suggestions to you about things to concentrate on or focus that that does not at all mean that you will in any way, shape or form lose control of yourself, your mind, your thoughts, your feelings, or anything like that. The - the relationship between somebody who's doing the hypnosis and someone who's going into hypnosis is very much like if you are going to go up to the boundary waters and go on a canoe trip and you didn't know much about canoeing. You might hire a guide.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And the guide can say well you have a bunch of options. We can go along this

chain of lakes where it's very pretty but the fishing isn't real good or we can go this other route where the scenery is not so spectacular, but the fishing is really great and if you like doing rugged things we can go over some portages that will really wear you out or we can...

((0:17:00))

Q: ...take very easy ones where the portages are nothing and we can almost throw the canoe from one lake to another and you get to choose.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Well the relationship between you and me is a lot like that. I'm - I'm a guide in essence. I have been over this route before. I can give you some choices about the kinds of things to concentrate on, different ways of going into hypnosis, but there's no power or special forces or magic or anything else. Um, hypnosis has been around since the beginning of recorded history. There are very clear descriptions of people going into hypnosis in the bible, in the Koran, in the hieroglyphic writings on the inside of most of the Egyptian tombs, pyramids and so forth. It's - it's a human phenomenon that's been around for a long time, and people have been remarking on it throughout human history. Um, hypnosis is not a state of mind in which a person loses awareness either. Not only don't you lose control but you don't lose awareness.

((0:18:00))

Q: Uh, some people get so focused and concentrated on what they are doing that they are not paying any attention to what else is going on. I've had for example now and again the UPS man will come and deliver a package to me and he won't knock on the door, he'll just barge right in and say whoops. And if the person who is in hypnosis at that period of time happens to, uh, to be able - comfortable relying on me to take care of it they might not even remember that it was the UPS man. They might say something but I just figured you'd take care of it. Other people will say what's going on here and they'll snap out of it.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: It depends from person to person but a person doesn't lose awareness. It's not like going to sleep where literally ones overall level of awareness doesn't mesh. And I guess the last thing that a lot of people tend to ask about is - is, um, will I for any reason just start babbling and divulge all of my private personal affairs? And the answer is no. First of all I'm not gonna ask about anything except what you saw on October 17 between the public library and

you car.

((0:19:00))

A: Mm-hm.

Q: The rest of your life is entirely yours. And even if I did there's a lot of research that shows that a person under hypnosis will not do something that they - that is against their morals or against their preferences. You just won't do it. Sometimes it can be - like having a drink or a beer or two it can loosen someone's inhibitions a little bit if they were sort interested in - in being a little more flaky then they might under hypnosis act a little flaky or something.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: But, uh, no - no basic change in character or anything like that.

A: Okay.

Q: So hypnosis is a cooperative venture where I want very much to be able to as much as I reasonably can tell you what the lay of the land is. Uh, I don't know exactly how you'll experience it or even if you're hypnotizable. But, uh, I'm also very much interested in making sure that you feel as comfortable and as safe and as respected as possible and that...

((0:20:00))

Q: ...therefore I'm not gonna be trying to lead you into any other area than exactly what I understand you to be here about which is what took place between the public library and your car on October 17th. And if anything along the way makes you feel uncomfortable or you got a question or anything, I would like you please to ask because if you want to stop because you're not comfortable I'd rather help you stop than have you feel like whoops I got to get - I got to get back to being my normal frame of mind.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: I rather deal with it cooperatively if that's okay. So I guess that's about the only other thing that I wanted to say on that.

A: Okay.

Q: What we'll do in a few minutes if you're comfortable and if that, uh, hypnosis consent form is acceptable to you - what I will do is I will ask you to as much

as possible feel comfortable in that chair, or if you don't like that chair you can have this one. Whatever but to - to be comfortable and concentrate...

((0:21:00))

Q: ...on an idea or a sensation or something that we figure out is halfway appealing and ask you to get absorbed in that idea and I will talk to you and try to help elaborate on that and see how intensely you can get into that. And then see if you can go into hypnosis and - and come back out and then we'll both know or all three of us will know whether or not that's a capacity you have. That's the best way I know of to test is to just plain straight up try it.

A: Okay.

Q: Does that leave you with any questions or concern?

A: No. Uh-huh.

Q: Okay, then let's us come back to the hypnosis consent form. And I read this out loud earlier.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Uh, are you comfortable with it?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, let me fill in the blanks here. A very important thing to do on, uh, any kind of consent form. So this is the Federal Bureau of Investigations.

((0:22:00))

Q: And assist my memory in recalling the following. Um, the details of a man in a car watching a boy reading outside the Saint Cloud Public Library on October 17, 1989. And we are at Minneapolis and it's November 21, '89. I want you to have a look at that.

((0:23:00))

Q: And see if what I've written in is okay with you and then if you're comfortable if you'll sign that as the interviewee. Okay, and I will sign it. And Dee Levine will sign it and make his television appearance. There ya go. (Unintelligible) that I keep in my folder here. All right, do you feel like you'd

like to take a break? Get...

((0:24:00))

Q: ...a drink of water or anything or would you like to just go ahead and.

A: No.

Q: I believe the next step is probably about 10 to 15 minutes.

A: I'll go ahead.

Q: Okay, fine. Um, all right, what we're gonna do for the next, uh, 10 minutes, maybe 15 is go through one of the literally several dozen sort of standard hypnosis "induction techniques" that I know of. And if this one doesn't appeal to you or doesn't work we can try any of several others and so this is - only one of many options we've got. And what I'm gonna do is just ask you to concentrate on an idea. Let's - do you like swimming?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Do you like floating in the water? Is the idea of floating at all appealing to you?

A: Especially in a boat yeah.

Q: Especially in a boat.

A: Okay.

Q: All right, then we're gonna use the boat.

A: All right.

Q: What I'm gonna try to do is I'm gonna try to find something that is - that captures - that captures your interest and - and your imagination would readily grab a hold of.

A: Okay.

((0:25:00))

Q: And ask you to concentrate on that and - and get into it as intensely as you can. And, uh, I'll - I'll ask you to concentrate on that and make some other suggestions and we'll see if at the end of about 10 or 15 minutes how

hypnotizable you seem to be. And we can talk about it and if that works then we found a vehicle and if that doesn't work well then we'll try some other...

A: Okay.

Q: ...way to do it. And, uh, the chair you are sitting in is one that, you know, is one of those chairs that can open up and would you - would that feel more comfortable to you?

A: Sure.

Q: All you have to do is push back on the arms. There's a little headrest there. So feel comfortable. Yeah. Is that okay?

A: That's fine.

Q: Good, okay. Just put your hands comfortably for me, uh, arms on the chair. And if you'll - do you wear contacts by chance?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, is your ponytail?

A: Yeah, this little guy is...

Q: There's a pillow right beside you. You can try putting that behind your neck and see if that helps.

((0:26:00))

Q: Is that comfortable?

A: Okay, yep.

Q: Okay, good. As you sit in this position look up towards your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head and as you hold your eyes up slowly close your eye lids. Take a deep breath. Exhale, let your eyes relax and concentrate on a welcome, pleasant feeling of floating. I'd like you to imagine that you're in a boat. It can be a row boat or a canoe or a sailboat. Any sized boat that you like. And as you concentrate on this feeling of floating you can perhaps feel the sensation of the waves just gently rocking the boat and you are floating. You might be sitting in a chair on the boat. You might be lying on the deck. You might just be sunning yourself...

((0:27:00))

Q: ...on a pleasant spring or summer afternoon. And, uh, you can just feel and imagine a floating, gently rocking sensation of being on this boat. And as you do I'd like you to imagine that your body is feeling lighter and lighter and as if you were still floating with the boat, just floating with it almost as if your body was rocking and floating as much as the boat is rocking and floating. And as you concentrate on this feeling of floating I want you to imagine that your left hand and arm is getting lighter and lighter and more and more (unintelligible). And in a moment you...

((0:28:00))

Q: ...will be able to let it float upwards. In a moment I'm going to stroke the middle finger of your left hand and after I do you will begin to feel little movement sensations in that finger and these movements can spread to the rest of your hand making your hand feel light and buoyant and you can let it float upward. Ready? First one finger and then another. And as these restless little movements develop your hand begins to feel lighter and lighter. Bending at the elbow you can just let it float up into upright position. This is an exercise in your imagination. And you can imagine that perhaps your left hand has tied to it a balloon - a helium filled balloon...

((0:29:00))

Q: ...just tugging at you peacefully, upwards. And as you concentrate on this light floating sensation you can let your hand just float easily and comfortably upward. I'm gonna help it get started. It's very light and easily. Your hand is getting lighter and lighter. Starting to float as if it could just float by itself easily, comfortably, upwards. Until it comes into an upright position and I'm just gonna put it in that position and you'll find that that's a comfortable position Ilene.

((0:30:00))

Q: And in fact your left hand and arm will remain in that position even after I give you the signal for your eyes to open. Later on when I put your hand down it will float right back up to where it is now. You may find something pleasant and amusing about this sensation. And then even later when I touch your left elbow, your usual sensation and control will return. Now in a few minutes when we want to do hypnosis in order to help you recall what you saw on October 17th we can use the sequence of steps that we've just been through like we describe for you what we've done so far just to remind you. We can use the count of 3, count of 1, look up towards your eyebrows and all the way

up to the top of your head.

((0:31:00))

Q: 2 holding your eyes up, close your eyes slowly, 3 take a deep breath, and exhale. Let your eyes relax and just concentrate. A gentle, pleasant feeling of floating, floating and rocking first in a boat and as you do your left hand and arm feel light and buoyant as if they could just float into this upright position. And that's your signal to yourself and to me that you shifted gears. You shifted gears into a state of hypnosis by concentrating. Concentrating on the pleasant and welcome sensation of floating. And in a moment I'm going to count backwards and when I reach the count of 2 you can roll your eyes up keeping your eye lids closed.

((0:32:00))

Q: And then when I count to 1 you can let your eyes open. Ready? 3, 2, roll your eyes up, 1, let them open. And as you sit in this position tell me what physical sensations you are aware of. Are you comfortable?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Does your left hand and arm feel comfortable?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Are you aware of any tingling sensation in your left hand or arm?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, does your left hand feel as if it's not as much a part of your body as your right hand?

A: I - I don't know.

Q: Does your left - for example does your left hand feel as connected to it - the wrist as your right hand does? Okay?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Now I'd like you to note this. If you watch your left hand, watch what's going to happen.

((0:33:00))

Q: And as you concentrate on your left hand you can imagine it to be tied to that balloon. That helium filled balloon that just tugs gently and easily, pulling upward. Ever so lighter. And as you watch it you can feel it. And you can let it behave as if it were connected to that balloon. In your case as you imagine that balloon like you (unintelligible).

((0:34:00))

Q: Like you got it at a fair or the zoo or a carnival of some kind. And can you let your hand just go into an upright position. By way of comparison raise your right hand. Now put your right arm down again. If you compare the feeling of one arm going up compared to the other one does one of them feel lighter or heavier than the other?

A: The right arm feels heavier.

Q: Okay, do you feel any difference in your sense of control? Do you feel like you have more or less control in one compared to the other?

((0:35:00))

Q: Okay. At the very beginning when I asked you to concentrate on the feeling of floating. Were you able to feel a floating sensation?

A: Mm.

Q: Was that focused in any part of your body or was it sort of an all over generalized feeling?

A: Kind of more all over.

Q: Okay, okay, you can move your hands and do whatever you want to. Um, what kinds of - what did you find yourself thinking about if anything while we were doing this?

A: I thought about being in our boat is primarily what I was thinking about and just letting it drift and all the waves slapping at the side of the boat. I could visualize.

Q: Uh-huh.

((0:36:00))

A: Just how relaxed I am, you know when I'm laying out and...

Q: Oh, okay.

A: Getting sun.

Q: Did the idea of your hand going up when I first brought it up did that, um, surprise you or you say what or did you have any reaction to that?

A: When you first mentioned it?

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I don't know. I guess I wondered if I - if mine would do it, you know, I didn't...

Q: And as - as I began to focus on that hand and arm what - what kinds of thoughts or reactions did you find yourself having?

A: Oh, my. I just, you know, I - I don't know. I kept thinking that I hope it works. You know, I hope I was trying to...

Q: Let me give you my reaction. My reaction is, uh, you seem to at - at - clearly be at least somewhat hypnotizable.

((0:37:00))

Q: I mean when was the last time one hand felt heavier than the other?

A: Yeah.

Q: And - and there - right there is the heart of what hypnosis is all about. For example, in this kind of a setting I'm asking you to imagine something. I'm using words. I'm describing something in words. I'm asking you to visualize or somehow respond accordingly. And certainly to some extent you got into it. Watching you I had the feeling that maybe the idea of your hand floating was - ended up being distracting. It's like that was something that was like extraneous to the rest of the idea that you were focusing on and if it weren't for that - if it weren't for the fact that that's the usual way I start off every time I would have dropped it.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And so I'm wondering if maybe we leave the arm floating business. Just leave it out and we go back to the idea of you being in your boat. We can use that as a - as a - as a mental vehicle...

((0:38:00))

Q: ...for you to relax and concentrate on something that's pleasant and, uh, peaceful and, uh, use that as the - the means for this. Because the whole idea here is once a person gets into, um, a state of hypnosis which is really just focused, concentrated frame of mind then and - and using any sort of imagery at all. There's no inherent meaning to the arm floating.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: It's just that it's someone can get into that idea strongly enough when the arm goes up I know they've shifted gears.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: It's so that I've got a visual signal. I don't need that. We can work out some other. Uh, but the basic idea is that

((0:39:00))

A: Probably mid - mid to late afternoon.

Q: Okay, and that's close enough. It is the afternoon. Okay. I just didn't want to say morning and you know it was afternoon and then you'd be wait a minute - wait a minute what's going on? So I would say from your reaction that you have at least a - a moderate amount of hypnotizability. And the trick now is - is for me to learn enough about what works for you that I can go along with ideas that were effective for you rather than asking you to do something that doesn't fit you very well. Okay?

A: Okay.

Q: So would you like to take a break here or would you like to just go ahead and proceed. Because what I would do is - is basically I'll find out just a little bit more about your boats that I can say some things about it. And, uh, we'll try it again using the boat as a - as a focus.

A: We can go ahead.

Q: Okay, um...

((0:40:00))

Q: ...what kind of a boat is it? Fishing boat or...

A: It's a speed boat.

Q: Speed boat?

A: And, um, is there any particular place on the boat that you like to be if you're relaxing. Has it got some cushions? Has it got padded seats so that you would lie over a deck that you lie on?

A: Probably to be the most relaxed I'd sit along our back. The back seat which is like a bench seat and I'd kind of be reclined somewhat would be the most relaxing part.

Q: And feeling the sun.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, that's what most people do.

A: Mm-hm. I say as it's snowing.

Q: Right.

A: Yeah.

Q: Right. Um, and where do you, uh, where do you use it on the river?

A: You - mostly the river. We put it on a lake sometimes but...

Q: Well, let's take a, um, another swing at this and leave out the hand floating business.

A: Okay.

Q: I just seems to be that's extraneous.

((0:41:00))

Q: And the whole idea is me to help you to get as absorbed in that idea of relaxing on the bench seat in the back of your speed boat. As the two of us can collaborate in doing.

A: Okay.

Q: Right? I think it'd be fun on a snowy (unintelligible).

Q1: I'll join ya.

Q: That's right. So let's use the count of 3 again, but we aren't going to do the, um, hand floating business. So 1 look up towards your eye brows, all the way up to the top of your head, 2 holding your eyes up close your eyes slowly, 3 take a deep breath. Exhale, let your eyes relax and concentrate on the idea of being on your speedboat. It's a boat you know. It's in an environment which you like whether it's on the lake or the river. And it's a sunny...

((0:42:00))

Q: ...not overly hot but pleasantly warm, pleasantly sunny day. And you have go the chance to just relax either by yourself or with whoever you'd like to have on board with you. And for the next several minutes you've got a chance to just meet quiet on the water and the boat at rest, just rocking gently with the waves of the current and just enough of a breeze to be pleasant and (unintelligible). And you're reclining on that bench seat in the back of your boat and sunning and there's just enough cool and enough breeze to make you comfortable and for the next few minutes you...

((0:43:00))

Q: ...have one of the most wonderful little interludes where there is not a thing in the world you have to do. You can just be. You can be quiet, at rest, peaceful, serene. There is nowhere you have to go. Nobody that you have to look out for. Nobody that you have to keep track of. You can just be quiet and peaceful and relaxed. And feel the warmth of the sun. Almost as though that warmth would just absorbing out of your body any stress, any tension, any thoughts of responsibilities or cares or issues or whatever.

((0:44:00))

Q: And instead you can just (unintelligible) be at rest, be at peace. Floating (unintelligible) gently on the boat in the water under the sun. Quiet. Peaceful. Stay relaxed and no cares, no worries, no (unintelligible), no responsibilities.

((0:45:00))

Q: The sun gives you warmth and (unintelligible). You're rocking the boat. Very peaceful and then very (unintelligible) and as you look - as you relax we can also listen to an idea and for the next couple of minutes I'm gonna ask you -

after we've been relaxing here for a while to let your mind shift to another time and another place, but not (unintelligible). And I want to advise you of two things which are very important. One is that if at any time...

((0:46:00))

Q: ...you want to either ask a question or tell me something that I'm not directly mentioning or referring to but you want to tell me you can. And especially this is - if for any reason you are bothered by some idea or image, you want to stop, you want to shift gears, you want to change the direction all you have to do is tell me and I will do everything to cooperate with you. You are here voluntarily and I want you to know that I want to make this as comfortable and pleasant an experience as it can be. So you can tell me anything that you feel you need to. Especially you can tell me if you need to (unintelligible)...

((0:47:00))

Q: Now as you are lying on your boat you can allow the image of the face of a clock to drift into your mind. This clock face might be one that - the face of a watch on your wrist or it might be the face of a big clock on the side of a courthouse. It could be any sides of any shape. As you look at this clock face you notice that it has an unusual property. The hands that go with this clock face is not only turned forwards to mark the forward passage of time. But these hands can stop and go backwards to mark the backward...

((0:48:00))

Q: ...passage of time. As you are lying just looking at this clock face in your mind's eye the hands of the clock start to turn backwards. And as they do time starts to go backwards. And you can go backwards in time and the minutes build into hours - the hours and the days. And time is going backwards. And you're going backwards in time. It's no longer the 21st of - of November. We're now back to the 20th, the 19th, 18th...

((0:49:00))

Q: ...17th, 16th, 15th, 14th, 13th, 12th, 11th, 10th, 9th, 8th, 7th, 6th, 5, 4, 3, 2, 1. October 31, 30, 29, 28, 27, 26, 25, 24, 23...

((0:50:00))

Q: ...22, 21, 20, 19, 18, 17, going backwards in time to the 17 of October. And on the 17th of October you among other things go to the Public Library. And for the next few minutes you can in your mind replay. It was as if you had a videotape. As if you could go backwards and rewind. You can go forwards,

you can play, you can do stop. You can do all the things with the images in your mind as if they were required on a videotape.

((0:51:00))

Q: And you can imagine that you're sitting in a theatre or in front of a television. Or even just looking at a blank wall and that videotape is being shown there and you can control it and you can picture yourself coming out of the library in the afternoon. Approximately the middle of the afternoon. And you start to walk from the public library towards where your car is parked. And you can see the things that you saw...

((0:52:00))

Q: ...as you are walking from the public library, out the door, towards your car. And as you watch this tape if you want to you can talk out loud and say what you saw or you can play the tape and I can ask you in a few minutes what you saw. Would you be comfortable talking as you're watching it? Okay, you can have your eyes opened or closed. Whichever way makes (unintelligible) a prayer or two.

((0:53:00))

Q: And as you come out the library what do you see?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Uh-huh, and what else as you're walking from the public library. What else do you see that's out in the sunshine?

((0:54:00))

A: I can see the boy.

Q: What is the boy doing?

A: He's reading a magazine or something.

Q: A magazine or something. What's the boy look like? How old does he look to you?

A: Young - 10 or 12.

Q: Uh-huh. What is he wearing? Can you see what clothes - kind of clothes he's wearing?

A: Jeans. A light jacket maybe.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: I can't. I don't remember.

Q: Okay. And what else do you see out in the sunshine in addition to the boy?

((0:55:00))

A: I see the car up ahead there.

Q: What did the car look like?

A: I'm pretty sure it's blue.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's small.

((0:56:00))

Q: Okay, so it's a small blue car. What else do you see about the car? Is there anybody in the car or do you get near the car?

A: There's a man in the car.

Q: What is he doing?

A: He's watching the little boy.

Q: And what do you think about that?

A: I wonder why he's watching him. I don't think he even sees me walking by.

Q: Does that surprise you or does that seem normal to you?

((0:57:00))

A: No it just seems like he's - all he sees is that little boy.

Q: Uh-huh. And what happens next?

A: I just keep watching the car as I walked by.

Q: Mm-hm. Mm-hm, what else do you see about the car?

A: I'm looking at the license number but...

((0:58:00))

A: And I'm trying to remember how I'll remember it.

Q: Uh-huh. What sort of thought are you having?

A: I'm trying to put words to the letters or...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Someplace that I can remember it.

Q: What kinds of (unintelligible)?

A: Usually something that I know of that the initials have meaning.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But there isn't any abbreviations or words that I have that match with that.

((0:59:00))

Q: What else do you see about the car? Can you see the name of it or what kind it is?

A: Just above the, um, right front tire like on the fender area. There's the - the little whatever you call the things that say the model of the car.

Q: Mm-hm. What does it say?

A: I think it says Chevette.

Q: Good. Can you see what kind of lettering that word (unintelligible). Is it script or block or capitals or lower case?

A: It's in script. I think.

((0:60:00))

Q: Okay. Do you see anything else about the car? And in your mind I think you said you were searching for some letters or some words that would go with the letters on the license?

((0:61:00))

A: I - I think there's a c. I just wish that I could see it. Maybe an R but I don't know that for sure.

Q: Mm-hm. Is there any kind of a - a holder that the license plate is in?

A: Black along the outside.

Q: Uh-huh.

((0:62:00))

Q: Does it say anything on the holder or frame?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay, is there any sort of sticker or anything with a bumper or the windshield or anyplace else on the car that you could see?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay.

A: What - I think the numbers on it might be 732. I wish I knew that for sure.

Q: Uh-huh. That's okay. You can get out some - you can say something...

((0:63:00))

Q: ...like the 732 that you're not positive of.

A: CKR maybe. It's not CXR I don't think. I think it's...

((0:64:00))

A: I'm not sure. Maybe CKR.

Q: Okay. If you look up through the license plate at the man...

((0:65:00))

Q: ...what - what do you see about him? Can you see him clearly?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: What does he look like?

A: Graying or grayish-whitish hair. Receding. I think he's looking at that boy.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Is he moving around inside the car at all or is he sitting still?

Q: He's just sitting there.

A: All right.

((0:66:00))

Q: Does he - does he have anything about his face that is at all striking to you? Does he have glasses or any hair on his face?

A: Mm-mm. No glasses. No beard or moustache.

Q: Mm-hm. Grayish, whitish hair.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Can you see any part of how he's dressed?

A: He's wearing a shirt with his emblem.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:67:00))

A: Embroidered. It's oval. The emblem is okay.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's got red and white stitching. I don't know if the emblem is white and the stitching is red or - but there is stitching with his name on it.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: Or a name on it.

Q: Okay. Can you see the name that's written?

A: I think it's Jim.

((0:68:00))

Q: And is it in script or is it in block letters?

A: It's written. It's in script.

Q: Okay and the emblem is on the shirt.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: What color is his shirt?

A: Blue.

Q: Okay.

A: It's not denim but it's that kind of a denim looking blue. Lighter blue. Like a faded denim.

Q: As you look back - you wanted to say something. Go ahead.

((0:69:00))

A: It just hasn't taken a - he hasn't even looked up. He's still looking at the - he doesn't shift his gaze at all. He's just looking at that young boy and the young boy isn't getting up and looking at the car. He's staying there on the bench.

Q: What do you think about - what do you make out of this?

A: It's just odd.

Q: Huh? As you look down at the license plate what - what do you see?

((0:70:00))

A: Now I'm wondering if the 3 isn't 8 instead of a 3. I don't know.

Q: And where do you see the 3?

A: The letters are first.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And then the numbers are second and it's the...

((0:71:00))

A: ...the middle digit of the three numbers.

Q: Okay, so it could be a 3 (unintelligible). Okay, what do you see in the other?

A: I'm still seeing a 7. I...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: 7, 3, or 8. And the 2.

Q: Mm-hm. So that's the right half of the license plate.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: What do you see on the left half?

A: I see...

((0:72:00))

A: I - I think there's a c and an r. I don't know what the middle one is for sure c. K maybe I...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I wish it would just spring to me.

Q: I'm gonna ask you to try something Ilene and, um, it's something that's called for want of a better word automatic writing. In a minute I'm gonna put a pen and paper in your lap and you can hold it with one hand. And I'm gonna give you a pencil to hold in your other hand.

((0:73:00))

Q: And you can just let your hand draw on the paper whatever seems to fit and what other part of that license plate seems to fit you can draw it on paper.

((0:74:00))

A: It's got the four little attachment spots.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:75:00))

A: I'm not coming up with anything. I'm not seeing anymore.

Q: Okay, why don't you just draw what you have seen so far?

((0:76:00))

Q: How'd we do? Okay. (Unintelligible) with the best you can picture it. You were gonna say something before I...

((0:77:00))

A: Oh, I can see Land of Ten Thousand Lakes. I don't know if it's written across the bottom but...

Q: Mm-hm. Okay, well that's very helpful. This is something that the bureau can figure out real easily and figure out whether it fits together or it doesn't or you give them a lead that they didn't have. And it's real clear you've been trying your hardest.

A: The whole time he - he never took his eyes off that - that little boy.

Q: It really upsets you doesn't it?

A: Oh. Just queer behavior.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:78:00))

A: He's thinner. He's not a heavy man.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I don't know. You know, it's hard when he's sitting behind a steering wheel and you can't really judge his whole frame size but definitely not overweight.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Medium, maybe to large build. Um, he's got receding hair. He's - I never saw his hands. I thought it odd that - I wish I knew if that was true. I mean if that's what it was. I don't know for sure if that's a license or not.

Q: That's something the bureau could check out easily.

A: This might - the 8 or the 2 might be a 3. The...

Q: Right. And we'll take that into account when they do the search. They can search for, you know, a number of different plates - letter combinations and see if they (unintelligible).

((0:79:00))

Q: Now my impression is - is that you had only remembered the c part before. Has any of the rest of this come back to you before?

A: That's what I wondered. I - I just don't know if so much of this has been because I'd been thinking so hard about it since I had called in. I'm trying to remember, um, I thought about the r before. And I also thought at one time that this - the k might have been an x. The reason I think that it probably isn't is that I would have remembered seeing the XR. Because that would have been my clue. Chest x-ray.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: Would have been how I would have remembered that.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And I think I would have remembered that but I don't know - it might be c something x...

((0:80:00))

A: ...x kept coming to me also. There might be an x in there. CRX maybe instead of CXR? That could be.

Q: Okay.

A: That C - I - I remember. I don't - I just don't remember it for sure but I think there was a C.

Q: Mm-hm. Are you a medical technician? Is that why chest x-rays?

A: I'm an RN.

Q: Oh, okay. Well that very definitely gives them something to work with. And I don't know. Do you know Dee? (Unintelligible) has written block letters. Should that? I don't know.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: That's what I think but I don't know whether I'm just going along with Ilene or not.

((0:81:00))

A: Is it up in the upper?

Q1: I can't remember that myself. I'm as bad at (unintelligible) as the next guy.

Q: All right. Now how are you feeling as to whether you are back completely in the present or not? Are you still...

A: I'm...

Q: Okay.

A: As a matter of fact my bladder is what's making me be in the present.

Q: Stop. Okay, then - then that's quite all right. We ought to take a break then.

A: Okay.

Q: Sometimes people still feel a little disoriented and I'd make it a little more orderly. But if you're back we'll let you, uh, excuse yourself and go visit the ladies room. Oh, it's about, um, 2:43 and we're gonna stop and we may just be for a break to finish up anything or it may be the end and we'll come back on and say which it is. Okay, Ilene is back from her break and it's 2:47. And, um, are you feeling okay?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Feeling oriented to time and place and all those standard questions?

((0:82:00))

A: Yeah.

Q: That you're familiar with. The only other things that - just a couple of things that I was curious to ask you about is had you recalled or - or had it - or at least in mind some numbers before this afternoon?

A: Oh, mm-hm.

Q: And had you conveyed those to the agent's you'd been talking with?

A: Oh, I don't - I don't think I did. I - they probably would have record of that.

Q: Yeah. I was just curious.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Um, and - and now having been through that period of looking at him in hypnosis can you make any comments about his age? You said gray hair (unintelligible).

A: Probably - probably more 60ish than 50's but...

Q: Okay. Who was the other partner with him? (Unintelligible). Had you remembered the shape of the emblem before?

A: It was oval, mm-hm.

Q: And what about the color?

((0:83:00))

Q: You said it was red and white this afternoon. Is that - is that new or is that something you recall (unintelligible).

A: That - that I remembered from before.

Q: Okay.

A: And I'm - I think it was white background with red stitches.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And I remember that the shirt - it wasn't dirty or mussed at all. I thought well if he's a mechanic he either hasn't gone to work yet or he doesn't work very hard. I mean...

Q: Right.

A: ...you know, nasty thing to say but there was not a - there was not anything askew.

Q: Yeah.

A: In his - everything was clean and in order and I couldn't see his hands to see if they were clean or not. But I think of that as a - you know, if he pumped gas or was a mechanic or something that - that's what I thought his shirt looked like.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Um, it wasn't apparent that he had been doing it that day because it had looked clean and...

Q: Do you have any questions of me or any observations about how things went?

((0:84:00))

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Was it comfortable?

A: Yeah, yeah.

Q: Was it relaxing?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Good. You're...

A: I could have fallen asleep easily.

Q: Okay, I can't think of anything else. I think probably the thing to do is to get the plate combinations over to somebody who will enter them in to the great computer in the sky.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

A: Oh, I - I just had such high hopes that, you know, it- all of a sudden it would pop right in there and I would say well - ding, ding, ding, ding. That's what I...

Q: Rarely.

A: That's probably an unrealistic expectation.

Q: Yeah. In my experience rarely does that happen. Even some of the most dramatic cases with hypnosis helping perhaps being a pivotal thing it is extremely rare that some full blown thing comes out. It's usually some part of a detail that then can be worked on in a normal investigative hard work.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Trying all the permutations and combinations so.

A: Uh-huh.

((0:85:00))

Q: I don't - I don't - I hope you don't feel like you have to beat up on yourself.

A: No.

Q1: Oh, no. That's something very few of us can do anyway. So.

Q: That's what I thought.

Q1: You did very, very well.

Q: It will take Tom about 20 minutes to run down all those combinations.

A: No.

Q: That's all it takes.

A: Aw, I'm impressed.

Q: I watched - the last time Dee and I worked together we were out in Wayzata Police Station and we finished interviewing somebody and came out and I told the, uh, the Wayzata policeman and he said, "Oh, I'll just put it in the computer." And in seven or ten seconds he had back the first license plate and the next one and the next one and we knew right away if any of them were...

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Exactly. Or even whether they are current, you know, current in...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...used license plates.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Because some of them aren't.

A: Mm.

Q: It's real quick. So thank you.

Q1: Yeah.

Q: It's nice to meet you and we'll turn the machine off at about 2:52.

((0:86:00))

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

HYPNOSIS INTERVIEW OF
Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=SA Dee Levine
Q2=John Payne
A=
A1=
A2=

Q: Uh, it's, uh, the day after Thanksgiving. It's Friday November 24th and my watch says it's 9:42 in the morning. And I'm Dr. John Rhetts and in the room with me are, uh, several other people and I'm gonna ask them each in turn just to say who they are and Dee you can swing the camera around so that you have a picture of everybody.

Q1: Okay.

Q: And this is...

A:

Q:

A1:

Q:

A:

Q: And over here and operating the camera back there is Dee Levine also with the FBI.

A: Yep, I'm here too.

Q: Good. And what I wanted to do just at the very beginning this morning is talk a little bit about what we're gonna do and answer any questions and explain things as completely and thoroughly so you have some idea on what we're gonna do this morning. As I say answer any questions - try to, uh, let anybody who's got some feeling of discomfort especially if it's cause they don't know

what's gonna happen to have that explained to them. I'm a, uh, a psychologist.

((0:01:00))

Q: And, uh, I've been working with the FBI for about the last 10 years. And they call me up when they have a situation in which somebody has seen or heard or in some way or other, um, seen or heard something that they're having trouble remembering the exact details of. And, um, when they and one of the things that we can do is we can try to see if a person who is, um, got some information, but can't remember it can, uh, be what's called hypnotized. And that word has got a lot of meanings to people and so that's one of the things that I wanted to talk about. I wonder if we've got any Kleenex in here. Maybe outside?

Q1: Yeah, I had some before.

Q: Okay, is it - let me just ask you at the very beginning is there something in particular that's upsetting you or...

A: Well, it's just what happened to me.

Q: Yes, okay, that I really do understand, and I'll try to not push you on something that's makes you real uncomfortable.

A: Okay.

Q: And but on the other hand if it upsets you...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...go ahead and let it show. Don't try to bottle it up - that's - that's not generally a good thing to do. Um, so hypnosis is, um, is something that sometimes helps people remember details. It's like - it's as if they could get past some emotion and upset and feelings and sometimes they can remember the specifics of - of what happened and of course when the - the police or the FBI is trying to find somebody they need information whether that's license plates or descriptions or that kind of thing. So that's - that's what hypnosis can sometimes - not always, but sometimes help the FBI do is get some more specific information, uh, from someone's memory, uh, and that - that can help with the investigation. I'll give you an example of a - of a time that it did work and a time that it didn't just to give you something concrete to go with.

((0:03:00))

Q: Um, out in California - about, um, it must be almost 10 years ago now. A

whole school bus of children was, uh, kidnapped. That is to say - two - what later turned out to be two vans came along and blocked the road past and blocked the road in front of a school bus. Made the drivers stop. Once somebody got out of the van, got into the school bus with a gun and made the bus driver take all the kids in the bus to a - a construction site where they had buried the back end of a big trailer truck. And they drove the school bus into the trailer truck or into whatever they'd excavated in the ground and covered it over. And then they made telephone calls and, uh, wanted to, uh - uh, get some, you know, money, uh, for releasing the children. Well the school bus driver tried and tried and tried and eventually got out. Called somebody, got help, got all the kids out and no ransom was ever paid. But they wanted to find out who did this and...

((0:04:00))

Q: ...after a little while they began to wonder if the school bus driver was in cahoots with the kidnappers. And, um, one of the things that - that was - was difficult for the school bus driver is he couldn't remember any of the details and he felt very responsible and very upset and then he was also under suspicion. So he was a very upset man and he was able to be hypnotized and he could remember the shape of the hubcaps and part of a license plate. And in California like Minnesota they had a little computer terminal there and they punched in what kind of a car that was or what - what brand of car it was from the hubcaps and the partial license plate and about 30 seconds they had a vehicle that fit that description. And the people who owned that and were in that van at the time didn't have an alibi and pretty soon they confessed and they had the kidnappers and the school bus driver was off the hook. Now that's kind of dramatic, but he didn't have to remember the whole license plate. He only remembered part but it fit - it fit into the puzzle.

((0:05:00))

Q: Now another, uh, situation which hypnosis couldn't help was in Saint Paul about five, six years ago now, uh, a girl was kidnapped after coming out from work. I believe it was at, uh, Perkins in downtown Saint Paul and she was kidnapped and driven away. And there were three or four high school students who were walking up the block and saw this girl being pushed into a car. And one of them said, "Run up and get the license plate to her friend." So her friend took off running, staring at the back of the car and tried to remember the license plate and she couldn't. And under hypnosis she couldn't. So when she came back out of hypnosis I picked up a paperback book off my desk and I held it up and it had big - big large letters on the cover with the title. And I said, "Read it to me." And she said, "I can't I don't have my glasses on." I said, "Did you have your glasses on that night?" "No." That's why she couldn't remember the license plate. She couldn't see it.

((0:06:00))

Q: So hypnosis is not magic. But, hypnosis is a, uh, frame of mind that some people can - can go into and sometimes it helps. So there's some - there's a story where it did and a story where it didn't work. Now usually what I like to do at the very beginning is ask have - have you got any questions in your minds already about hypnosis or about this procedure that you'd like to ask? I can tell you more about hypnosis, but sometimes people already have real important questions. And so you or if you've got any questions about it that you'd like to ask right at the beginning? ? Okay, well let me tell ya a little bit about hypnosis. Uh, have - have you ever heard of it before, know anything about it, seen it in the movies or anything? Have you all? Yeah, I figured you - most - most adults have seen it somewhere along the line. Hypnosis is, um, is a very real phenomenon.

((0:07:00))

Q: Um, back in the - in the 20's and 30's - 1920's and 1930's - that's before any of us in this room were born I'm quite sure. I'm probably the oldest maybe. I don't know. But, uh - uh, there was some real question that hypnosis was just a fake kind of a thing. Well we've been doing research on hypnosis in laboratories and good scientific research and hypnosis is a real phenomenon. And what hypnosis appears to be is some people can go into - it's like, you know, some people can daydream real easily. Some people can - can imagine something. They can picture an idea and they can get all absorbed in it and they can lose track of what's going on around them. Like as I understand you were out deer hunting last weekend, right? Did you get a deer?

A: No.

Q: No, okay. Did, uh, did you - were you sitting in a stand?

A: No, I was standing.

Q: You were standing. But were you moving around a lot or being - standing in one place quietly?

A: I was just standing in one place.

((0:08:00))

Q: Now did - were you there for - for quite a while? Did you find yourself daydreaming and thinking about other things? Or were you always every single second watching for a deer? You were off daydreaming sometimes.

Okay. And some people can - can do that and they can get so involved in those daydreams that they lose track of where they are and suddenly, you know, something happens around them and they are sort of startled. Well that's a lot like hypnosis. And some people can't do that at all. What hypnosis seems to be is a frame of mind, um, that some people can kind of slip into in which they really focus and they concentrate their attention on something and then it becomes very - very real. It seems really, really real to them. So, for example some people can go to a movie or watch television or even read a story in a book and it may seem so real to them that they feel like they lived it. Uh, I for example almost any time I watch a sports event on television or in a movie, I start to feel myself imitating what that person is doing.

((0:09:00))

Q: Uh, especially ice skaters and bicyclists and people like that where you can really see the motion. I start to feel myself as if I was skating and I never was a hockey player, but if I watch hockey boy do I start to feel my muscles actually working. I get so involved in what's going on. And I'm highly hypnotizable. And so hypnosis is, uh, a state of mind that somebody can go into, and what it does is you - you focus and you concentrate your attention on something. And that can be something that's just imaginary and fun or it could be something like - I used to have a - a friend who when he would - wanted to study what he would do is he would imagine that he was looking through a telescope and he was far away from the book or the thing that he was studying. But the telescope brought it up close, but then he couldn't see anything else and he imagined that the telescope was sort of like a - a telescope for his ears too and he couldn't hear anything else.

((0:10:00))

Q: So he could sit in a crowded room and be absolutely undistracted. He could focus on studying to an extent I never have been able to do. I mean if there is noise around me I can go and check it out. But he could just zoom on that and it made it very easy for him to do his homework in some very noisy and - and, uh, chaotic situations. So that's essentially all hypnosis is - is the ability to go into, um, a - a frame of mind in which you are really focusing and concentrating on something. And when we do work with someone like you , uh, what we try to do is to have - figure out something that is kind of pleasant. And even kind of curious and fun if possible. That you focus and concentrate on first to get used to the idea of doing that and then we shift your attention back to whatever day and time and whatever happened to you that you're working with the FBI about.

((0:11:00))

Q: And, uh, one of the things that we can do is we can say to you or I can say to you that later on when you come back out of hypnosis you can leave the feelings - the upset feelings about what happened in hypnosis. And sometimes that really works so you sort of - you know what a safety deposit box is in a bank? You can - you can - we can say this room or hypnosis is like a safety deposit box for the upset feelings and you can leave the upset feelings here. And that might make it seem a little less troubling to do this this morning. Um, we don't want to lock 'em up though forever because you need to keep expressing your feelings so you get past 'em. I'm sure it was troubling. I'm sure it was upsetting and, um, uh, yet expressing yourself is an important thing to do to get past it. Just putting you know like putting them in an imaginary bottle and popping a cork on it isn't gonna in the long run be the best thing. So you just hang in there, pal.

((0:12:00))

Q: Um, some people thing hypnosis is a - a - a situation in which somebody, uh, becomes unconscious like going to sleep and in some movies and in some books they talk about you're getting sleepier and sleepier. Well it turns out from the research we've done hypnosis is not at all like sleeping. A person is perfectly aware if anything - even more aware, but their awareness is focused on some one thing. Now giving an example of something that often, um, gets people to go into hypnosis. Have you ever driven along - I'm pretty sure living in this part of the world you have ever driven along at night in a snow storm with the headlights on, and seen that sort of imaginary place out there in front of the car where the snowflakes all seem to be coming from and they all seem to sort of spread out like that? You know what I'm talking about? If you watch that for a while you can probably get so absorbed in it - it just sort of locks your mind on it.

((0:13:00))

Q: A lot of truck drivers and salesman and other people that drive long distances at night in the snow, uh, have got to watch out for that because they start watching that, pretty soon they are not watching the road and they are in the ditch. And so there is an example of where some people probably without even thinking about it go into a state of hypnosis, and they get all concentrated on where the snowflakes are coming from and they aren't concentrating on, uh, their - the rest of the road and trying to keep track of where the edges and turns and stuff are. So there is a common everyday example. So hypnosis is something that a lot of people have done on their own. As I say an intense day dream that seems real at the time is probably at least a mild state of hypnosis if not, um, even more than mild state of hypnosis. If not, um, even more than mild state of hypnosis. So it's a natural thing that happens with the mind. Some people do it a lot and some people just report that they never day dream.

My wife says for example that she almost never daydreams. She just doesn't - she doesn't use her imagination whereas...

((0:14:00))

Q: ...I'll look at something and I'll start imagining from a map I can almost imagine what the place is like before I get there. And, uh, she looks at a map and all she sees is lines and little numbers that she can look at for road side signs. So, different people use their imagination in different ways and of course we don't know how hypnotizable you might be. You might not be at all in which case then this isn't going to do much of anything. And if you are hypnotizable then it might help you recall some more specific details so that the investigators can have more to go on. Um, but it's not a situation - hypnosis is not a situation in which you lose control. It's not a situation in which somebody gets control over your mind or any of those kinds of things. Because you don't lose control of your mind when you're in a daydream. You've just gotten absorbed in something. And you can get it back any time something causes you to "snap out of it" so that's very much what hypnosis is - is just...

((0:15:00))

Q: ...we're doing it on purpose instead of having it happen sort of by accident in the normal course of what else is going on. Now does that leads to any questions or concerns or - cause I think it's real important that if you do have either questions or something that concerns you that we talk about it because first of all if you are concerned about it, and you're not comfortable with it - it won't work. It won't happen and so that's one of the real important reasons to be sure we talk about it.

A1: Can they block it out so even if you hypnotize them they can't?

Q: Yes.

A1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Mm-hm, yes indeed. Uh, a person could have been through something or seen something and just not be so - feel so strongly that they don't want to remember it or experience it again. That they can block it out. Uh, I've worked with a number of people who, uh, have been through child abuse and are now adults and they know it happened and they need to remember it and express their feelings about it, but they - they just can't get at it either at all.

((0:16:00))

Q: Or for a very long time because, um, it's too - it's so painful. In a very real sense they - they want to but they don't want to and very often they don't want to can win.

A1: He might not remember or he might.

Q: He might not remember anything more than he's remembering right now sitting there. And also I should say the hypnosis - some people think that hypnosis is sort of like a truth serum of some kind. Under hypnosis a person can make up information just as much as they can when they're awake. There is nothing about being in hypnosis that makes someone tell the truth? So you know there's - it's not changing the person's mind any sort of a way. It's - it's sort of like, you know, you got a horse or a car and you can harness it and - and get it to do something for you and in this case sometimes you can harness that ability to imagine and get really concentrated and help recall the information. There's no - there's no guarantees in this.

((0:17:00))

Q: There is indeed no guarantee that something that someone remembers under hypnosis is - is accurate or truthful. Indeed if - if they have been thinking about something, if a person is thinking about something so hard and so hard and imagining it being different than it really was, it will probably be more likely to go along with what they imagined it which is different than it would be to go back to the original true whatever happened. So there's lots of, uh, uncertainties here and no guarantees. Any other questions? Does the idea of doing this sound comfortable to you? Okay, would you tell me if it weren't?

A: Yeah.

Q: Good, please. And if at any point that we're working together feels uncomfortable please just say so. Cause as far as I'm concerned you are here as a volunteer and - and you can walk away any time you feel the need to and I would rather help you walk away than be part of trying to hold your feet to the fire or on something that you're not comfortable with. Okay, let me ask kind of a procedural question, would either you very much prefer to be in the room or would you like to have both your mom or dad or both in the room or how - cause we can go either way. How do you feel about it?

((0:18:00))

A: Okay.

Q: Either way is okay with you? Do you guys have a strong preference?

A2: (Unintelligible).

Q: Okay.

A2: (Unintelligible).

Q: Okay, and that's comfortable with you? Okay, uh, then let's try it that way. Sometimes people in - in situation feel like there are so many people here, I've got the eyes of the world on me. And so if it seems like that's a problem I might ask if you're comfortable we'll try the other way. As far as I'm concerned let's try it with. Okay, would you prefer to be in or out?

((0:19:00))

A1: In.

Q: Okay, okay. Well let me know explain to you what we'll do. I've already done what is usually what I call chapter two. I did that as the explanation of what hypnosis is. What we'll do is we'll do three steps. And we can take a break in between the steps or we can stop just about any old time, and go get a drink of water and go to the bathroom or any of those ordinary things. Um, the first thing I'll do is I'll ask you because I know nothing about what's happened to you and that's on purpose. It's not because John and I didn't have a chance. We talked briefly on the phone yesterday. But it's so that I don't know anything about what happened and I don't ask any leading questions. In other words I'm only going to be able to ask questions based on what you tell me. And I'm just gonna ask you to tell me what it is you recall happening. What - what you saw, what you experienced, what happened. Then we'll take a break if we want and the next thing we'll do - the second thing will be - is to see if you're hypnotizable. And we'll go through one or two or three kind of normal ways to hypnotize people. And then if you're hypnotizable we'll try to ask you what you recall happening while you're under hypnosis. And that will be the chapter three.

((0:20:00))

Q: And in between - and part of that chapter two after we find out if you're hypnotizable I'm going to ask all three of you, but one of the other of you to sign a formal release that says you give permission for to recall whatever it is. In other words to undergo hypnosis and be interviewed in hypnosis. Okay? Because that's just part of what needs to stay with the videotape that goes into the FBI files, so that they can show that they had permission to do what we did. It's a- it's all in English. I wrote it. So you'll be able to understand...

((0:21:00))

Q: ...exactly what it says. Now do you have any concerns about going ahead at this point or you feel comfortable enough to go ahead? How about you?

A2: As long as he wants to go through with it (unintelligible).

Q: And I know it's upsetting and I hope you just will understand that first of all letting the feelings come out is probably a really good thing to do. It's not that it's fun, but it's a good thing to do. And that, um, we can stop and take a break whenever it feels like it's too much for you. And, uh, all you have to do is tell me. Okay? Now let's, um, rearrange ourselves a little bit. I'm gonna - I'm gonna probably get to sit in this chair and I'll sit here and, um, I guess there's no reason why you two can't just stay right there. This is an extra chair. Why don't you leave that on Dee and we'll move this? Let's move this.

((0:22:00))

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: The first time we came here to Wayzata we discovered that that refrigerator has a whine that, uh, comes through on the tape and blocks out voices. Now I'm gonna put the microphone on you now. I'm just gonna slip it under the arm here. And clip it like one of those news - newscasters? You got the newscasters, uh, microphone. And we have had - is the way we're set up okay Dee?

Q1: Fine, very good.

Q: Good. I'm warm in this room and so I'm gonna take my jacket off. Now what I'd like to do is ask you to tell me...

((0:23:00))

Q: ...as best you can what happened. What day and where you were. Some things like that so that I'll - I'll know what it is we're talking about, okay? What day - do you remember the date?

A: I think it was Friday.

Q: Mm-hm. And was it in October or November?

A: It was in October or November.

Q: November?

A: Yeah, it was last week I think. Wasn't it?

Q: So it was last Friday? Okay, so if today is the 24th - that's the 25th. It must have been the 18th.

Q1: 17th.

Q17: Th. Okay, and, um, what happened around that time?

A: I was - I got out of basketball practice and when I was walking down to the curb a long, tan car pulled up next to me and he rolled down his window and he ordered me to get into his car.

((0:24:00))

Q: That must have been frightening. And what did you do?

A: I ran around the back side of his car.

Q: And then what?

A: I ran to the other side. I ran around the Odd Fellows Post.

Q: You ran around the...

A: Odd Fellows Post. And then I seen him turn around in the - at the Village Hall.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So I ran down Main Street. Cause I saw where he was going. He was going back out of town.

((0:25:00))

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Then when I got home I didn't tell my parents.

Q: You didn't?

A: Not for a long - an hour or so.

Q: Okay.

A: And I just didn't want to talk about it at that time.

Q: Mm-hm. Let me ask you a question. It's pretty obvious that mom's upset. Does seeing her upset make you feel upset?

A: A little.

Q: A little? Okay, um, and then so you - you got home and after an hour or so you told your parents what had happened.

((0:26:00))

A: I told my mom.

Q: Your mom? Okay, did you see him again after that?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay.

A: My friend Mike - I was at school and he said that night he saw the tan car goin' towards the school.

Q: That was after it happened to you?

A: Well, yeah. He - he - I was the last one out of the school.

Q: Mm-hm. And so he was - was - your friend was already...

A: Home.

Q: Oh, he was already home. He saw the tan car heading towards the school.

A: He was home and he - he looked out his window and he - I was the last one out of school.

((0:27:00))

Q: Okay, let me back you up - when, um, when the car - you were coming out of basketball practice. And of course I don't know what that situation look like. Is there - is there a sidewalk coming out of the building?

A: There's - there's a curb.

Q: Right there near the door?

A: No, you got to - it's - there's a playground you have to walk through and there's a way out and there's - there's a sidewalk that goes down I don't know what street it is.

Q: That's okay.

A: It's just right by the - I was right by the curb and that's when it happened.

Q: So you went through the playground and had gotten to the sidewalk and - and right at the curb is when his car pulled out?

A: Right by the bus driveway.

Q: Okay. And, uh, what side of the car pulled up next to you? Was it the driver's side or the passenger's side?

A: Passenger's side.

Q: So he put - and the car was a tan car?

((0:28:00))

Q: Do you know what kind of shape it was?

A: It was a longer one.

Q: Like, was it a sedan or a station wagon?

A: No. It was more like - when I looked at the cars it was more like the Lincoln Town car.

Q: Uh-huh. So it - it was like a regular car with a trunk? Not a station wagon right?

A: It was a station wagon.

Q: Okay, and, um, was there more than one person in the car?

A: Just one that I saw.

Q: And the man rolled the window down?

A: He must have had power windows because he rolled it down on his side.

Q: He - okay, so you didn't see him lean across or anything. And what exactly did he say to you?

A: He told me - he yelled at me and he said get in the car.

Q: And did you look in the window? Could you see him?

A: He was wearing a mask.

Q: He was wearing a mask?

((0:29:00))

Q: And what was the - what did the mask look like?

A: It was black.

Q: And was it like something just across the bottom of his face? Like a ski mask (unintelligible).

A: It was a ski mask.

Q: Uh-huh. I think this is real frightening and it's real - very appropriate to cry. Could you see anything about what he was wearing?

A: He was wearing a jacket.

Q: A jacket like the kind that John or I had on? Or like a jacket more like your mom and dad had on?

((0:30:00))

A: It was a casual jacket.

Q: More like the kind you're wearing, uh-huh.

A: And no hood.

Q: No hood.

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay, could you see what color - what the colors were in the jacket?

A: It was - I think it was maroon. I don't know.

Q: Okay. And was there anything else that you could see inside the (unintelligible)?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: And so you ran around the car. I'm gonna draw sort of a picture so. I'm imagining that this is the curb? And - and you are there. So the car came up like this?

A: Yeah.

Q: All right, and so the car went and came up and it's facing like that. And which way did you run?

((0:31:00))

A: I ran that way around it.

Q: Around the back. And did the man say or do anything as you ran?

A: Yeah, well he seen me go around and I think he looked at which way he was going and he went up. Then he went up and turned around the Village Hall.

Q: Okay, the Village Hall is up here?

A: Yeah.

Q: And he went up and turned around. And did he come back towards you?

A: Yeah, he came back slow and then once I - he seen me running down Main Street he went down the - he didn't go down Main Street. He went - he was going - I thought he was headed right out of town. That's where he was headed.

Q: So did - did he or the car get close to you again at all? Because the Old Fellows Post is somewhere over here?

A: It's right up here.

Q: Okay, so you went around the car and around the Odd Fellows Post and he turned around and went this way. Have I got that right? Okay, cause you know, I've not - I've not been there, so I don't know where things are and that's why I have to ask.

((0:32:00))

Q: Did you look any - at the car at all after you began to run around the back of it?

A: No.

Q: Okay, so you didn't look for example at the license plate or anything like that?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay, I can understand that. Believe me. I can understand you wanting to get out of there as quick as you could. Um, was there anybody else along here or around the area? Was there anybody over at the Odd Fellows?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Were there any cars on the lot there?

A: No.

Q: No? So it's pretty - you were pretty much alone. Okay. He had on a dark or a black mask and it was a tan car and I guess you've already looked at some books of cars and - and okay.

((0:33:00))

Q: Do you remember anything about what color the seats were inside the car?

A: I think they were brown.

Q: Like a light brown or a dark?

A: Light brown.

Q: Sort of like that light or that light or...

A: It was like this. It wasn't really dark.

Q: Okay. You didn't see anything lying inside...

Q: Uh-uh.

A: ...on the seat or anything like that? Did you look at the back of the car as you

ran around it?

A: Just - I just - when I was going around I just got a glimpse of the bumper.

Q: Uh-huh. Did you see any sort of stickers or letters or anything on the bumper?

A: It was a little rusty but not...

((0:34:00))

Q: Okay. And then where were you when you saw him heading out of town?

A: I was right up - right by the Oddfellows and I started running down that way.

Q: Okay, so this is the Oddfellows.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: And you had gone around the car and where did you go? Did you go behind it or...

A: Right up here.

Q: Okay, so you were up there and then you saw him going out of town?

A: So I went back this way and I stood right there and then I started runnin' off.

Q: Is this Main Street going this way?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And where was he going at that point?

A: I don't...

Q: Was he heading straight away from you? And what could you see? What time of day was this?

A: It was at night.

Q: So it was dark. Okay, and, um, could you see the car where - when it was heading away?

A: Huh? I just seen it - I just seen it head that way and I ran.

((0:35:00))

Q: Uh-huh, and you just took off this way.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Okay. Is there anything in particular that I've left out John at this point? Cause there are a number of places that we could try to see if could focus in on any details that he might remember that he doesn't right now, but, um.

Q1: Just a description of the car and the person that was in it is, uh.

Q: Yeah.

Q1: Where we want to focus.

Q: Sure. Okay, okay, well I think that really gives me a - a clear enough picture that - that takes care of that part. Now the next thing we'll do if you're comfortable is we'll, um, see if you're hypnotizable. Would you like to take a break, get a drink of water or just stretch your legs or something before we go on or would you rather just go ahead?

((0:36:00))

A: Can I just go ahead?

Q: All right, now here's where we're gonna ask, um, everybody to, uh, or at least you, your mom and your dad to all pay attention to this. What I want to do is, um, I want to read what is called hypnosis consent form. And I think it will be pretty clear, um, what it - what it's all about. Let me just fill in.

((0:37:00))

Q: Okay, let me read to you what's on this piece of paper and I always read it out loud so that it's on tape as well. Says hypnosis consent form. It says I here- I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis, and to be interviewed under hypnosis in order to assist the Federal Bureau of Investigation with an investigation that it is conducting. I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview, and that this videotape may be used for any lawful purpose connected with the investigation or any subsequent action based on the investigation.

((0:38:00))

Q: Dr. John Rhetts - a licensed consulting psychologist has explained the

procedures to be used during the course of this hypnosis session, and any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction. The purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my memory in recalling the following. An attempted kidnapping on the evening Friday, November 17, 1989. Is that pretty much in English like that (unintelligible)? Have any reservations about that? Is that okay with you? Did you understand what I was saying? You okay with that? Are you okay with that as his parents? Okay, um, I'm gonna have sign it, but also have one of the other parents sign it as well. Okay, let's see where the line's at. November 24, 1989. Okay, what you should do is just sign - sign on this line right here.

((0:39:00))

Q: Okay, and now you'll sign next to his name there (unintelligible). Thanks. And I will sign. Okay, now what we will do is spend a few minutes here finding out one way or another how hypnotizable you are. And, um, as I said earlier if at any point any of this makes you, oops, feel too uncomfortable please just tell me and we'll stop. And, uh, then if you're hypnotizable we'll take you back in time and see if that can help pick up any other details that you may not be able to remember right now. Okay? Okay.

((0:40:00))

Q: Now if you'd just sort of put your arms on the arms of the chair. What I'm gonna ask you to do is just for the next couple of minutes here you - you - I forgot to look are you right or left handed?

A: I'm right handed.

Q: Okay, that's - for the next few minutes I'm gonna ask you to focus and concentrate your imagination on what I hope is something pleasant and maybe even kind of interesting, and if you can just let yourself get - get involved in that. Get into it as much as you can. Please don't fake anything. That wasn't going to help anything. I mean don't - don't try so hard that you're just - just simply acting. But try to let your imagination take a hold of these ideas and see if you can really get involved in it. Okay? And then at the end here...

((0:41:00))

Q: ...we'll decide how hypnotizable you were, and then we can decide what to do next. Okay. Now if you would first of all look up toward your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head and if you hold your eyes up like that slowly close your eyes lids. That a boy. Take a deep breath. Let the breath out. Let your eyes relax and just concentrate. Start concentrating on kind of a

floating, pleasant feeling of floating. As if you were just floating in water while you're swimming, or floating in a boat just bobbing on the water and your whole body is beginning to feel light and buoyant as if you could float just like a cork or a piece of Styrofoam.

((0:42:00))

Q: Just floating on the water and as you concentrate on that floating feeling I'm gonna concentrate on your left hand and arm. In a minute I'm gonna stroke the middle finger of your left hand and after I do you can begin to feel little movement sensations in that finger, and these movements will spread to your hand making your left hand feel light and floating and you can just let it float upward. Ready? First one finger and then another and as these little movement feelings begin to spread your left hand is to feel light and floating, and you can just let it float upward as if your left hand were connected to a balloon. One off those helium filled balloons that you can get at the fair or a carnival and it's just tugging gently on your hand making your left hand feel light...

((0:43:00))

Q: ...and buoyant and you can let it float upwards and I'm gonna help it get started. Light. Floating, up and up it comes - that a boy. As if the balloon were just nestled under your hand. It's just nestled right in the cup of your hand floating. Floating. Up and up. Just bends in the elbow and it floats up and up. This is going to be a comfortable position ..

((0:44:00))

Q: ...and I'm gonna put your left hand and arm in that position, and it's gonna be comfortable enough that later on when I give you the signal for your eyes to open your hand and your arm will just stay in that upright position just floating there. And later on when I put your hand down it will float right back up to where it is now, and you'll find something pleasant and amusing about this sensation. Even later when I touch your left elbow you'll being to feel your usual feelings and control in that hand and arm. Now, I want to go over with you the steps that we've just been through, because later on when you want to go into a state of hypnosis again you can use the three steps that we've just been through and I want to say what they are to remind you.

((0:45:00))

Q: We can use the count of three. At the count of one you look up towards your eye brows and all the way up to the top of your head, at the count of two holding your eyes up you close your eyelids slowly. The count of three you

take a deep breath, let it out. And concentrate on a welcome pleasant feeling of floating. And as you concentrate on this feeling of floating your left hand and arm begins to float slowly and easily into this position it's in now. Straight up and down. And that floating of your hand is your signal to yourself and to me that you've shifted gears, that you've shifted yourself into a state of hypnosis. And in a moment I'm gonna count backwards...

((0:46:00))

Q: ...and you can follow along. When I reach the count of two you can roll your eyes up keeping your eyelids closed and when I say one you can let your eyes open slowly. Ready? Three, two, roll your eyes up. One, let them open. And as you sit in this position tell me what - what feelings you have. Do you feel any, uh, tingling feelings? I'd like you to, uh, raise your right hand and now put your right arm down again. As you compare your - the feeling in one arm compared with the other does one of them feel different than the other?

A: This one does.

Q: And how does it feel different?

A: It feels - it's not like so heavy.

Q: It's not so heavy. Okay, I'd like you to watch and see what's gonna happen.

((0:47:00))

Q: And you can watch your left hand and arm and see what it's gonna do. And as you watch it you can imagine that it's connected to that balloon that we talked about before. That balloon is just tugging upwards. Lifting gently. And you can let your arm just act as if it were connected to that balloon. Does it still feel lighter than the other one? Can you let it just act as if it were?

((0:48:00))

Q: Like what would it do right now if it was a real bright blue balloon full of helium? The string was tied with the back of your hand? What would your hand do?

A: Go up.

Q: Can you let it go up? That a boy. Balloons just tugging. Lift up.

((0:49:00))

Q: And up and up it comes. (Unintelligible). Ever so easily just let it float. And up it comes. That's right. A little higher and a little higher. Just floats until it's straight up and down.

((0:50:00))

Q: That a boy. Now again raise your right hand and put it down again. And you compare the feeling in one arm going up with the other one does one of them feel lighter or heavier?

A: Sort of feels a little lighter.

Q: Okay, do you feel like you have any difference in how much you control? Each hand. Is there a difference in how much you control them? They feel the same? Okay, all right.

((0:51:00))

Q: Now I'd like you to notice one more thing. Make a fist with that hand. Relax the fist. Just open it up. Now move your two arms down. Tell me how they feel.

A: Sort of feels more relaxed.

Q: It does? Does it still feel lighter?

A: Just a little.

Q: So you can see that that hypnosis effect is going away? It's not as strong as it was? Do you have any idea what made it go away? Is there anything that I did in particular that you can think of that made that hypnosis go away? Okay. Well, are you surprised? Do you think that your left hand would suddenly feel lighter? Look at the little tiny smile sneaking in there.

((0:52:00))

Q: We're - we're done with the hypnosis part for right now. And, um, you can move around and be in whatever position you are comfortable in. When I was asking you to imagine your hand was floating? Did it feel lighter right away or did it take some time?

A: Took some time.

Q: And when I reached over - could you feel when I reached over and started helping it lift up? Did - did that jar you? Did that seem out of place or did that

feel okay?

A: Felt okay.

Q: Well the picture I get is - is that you seem like you're sort of in the middle range of - of being able to be hypnotized. Um, and the main reason why I say that is - is that, um, just because I said your hand would feel light and floating it did feel light to you didn't it? We didn't - you know what gravity is right? It's what makes things fall.

A: Mm-hm.

((0:53:00))

Q: Well we didn't change gravity in this room this morning did we? And I didn't take any thing off your arm so that isn't how it got lighter. It got lighter because you imagined - you went along with the imaginary idea that I was describing. And that's exactly what hypnosis is. Does that help it make a little more concrete for you all? It could have been any other idea. I could have said you're feeling heavier and heavier. You know like sometimes when you're tired and you're sitting in the chair you just feel like you don't want to move even though you know you could. Well your arm was - was heavy when I lifted it, and I wondered if you were holding it down a little bit. Were you trying that at all? No? Okay, cause some people just don't like the idea of floating. And other people like it and so I- I'm always searching around for one particular idea. It's kind of interesting to somebody. And it's quite clear from what has said that just describing the idea of floating made him feel like his hand was floating. It was different to him than his right hand.

((0:54:00))

Q: And that's the whole idea of hypnosis right there in a nutshell. Now some people can take a hold of that idea. Like some people are natural athletes and some like me are natural klutzes. Well some people naturally can take that idea and their hand just floats back up all by itself. didn't do that. With a little help from me and then at the very end it seemed like it was kind of floating by itself. Do you know what I mean? That's just - there's nothing good. There's nothing bad. By the way you can't fail or there's no passing or failing this test. It's just how hypnotizable is somebody. And it looks to me like is somewhere in the mid-range where most people are. Very, very few people are extremely hypnotizable and very, very few people are not hypnotizable at all. Most people are somewhere in the middle. Like everything else. Like shoes size and height and weight and everything else, most people are somewhere in the middle. So what I'd be...

((0:55:00))

Q: ...uh, inclined to do is let's take a two or three minute break here. And, uh, I know where there is a drinking fountain. At least I want a drink. If anybody else does I'd be glad to show you where it is. And then let's come back and let's try, um, and I may change a little bit of what we did for the hypnosis. Like do you think - have you ever imagined ever feeling so heavy it's like your body was made out of lead? Can you kind of get into that idea?

A: Sort of.

Q: I think we might try the opposite of floating just as an idea to sort of get into, because it seemed to me from my experience that the idea of having your hand float didn't altogether quite make sense to ya. Is that - is that kind of right do you think? (Unintelligible) we'll just try the opposite sensation. And we'll begin with that and see if can get just feeling real heavy. Just so that he knows...

((0:56:00))

Q: ...he shifted gears and gotten absorbed in that idea. And then we'll go back in time and one of the other things that I'll - I'll ask you about before we do that is whether you'd like to be able to turn the feelings off while you're talking about and trying to picture it. I imagine you might. We'll talk about that. So my watch says it's 10:38. Let's take a two or three minute break here and then we'll come back.

Q1: There's a bathroom upstairs and then...

Q: There's also a drinking fountain right at the head of the stairs. That's where I'm going. Let me just ask - do you have any questions that you'd want to ask or. Oh, yeah, boy I almost knocked it down. I was gonna say we got to unclip you or you'll be walking out on a long cord.

((0:57:00))

Q1: I'm glad you remembered that. I'd forgotten too.

Q: Does anybody else want to use the bathroom or get a drink of water? Coming back on. My watch says it's 10:43. Still, um, Friday the day after Thanksgiving. The 24th of November 1989. And in the room are the same two, four, six people that were here before. Uh, I - I guess we better just for the record be willing to say who's here so we don't have to turn the camera around. I'm Dr. John Rhetts. And you are?

A:

Q: And...

A:

Q: (Unintelligible).

Q2: John Payne.

Q1: Dee Levine.

Q: Okay, we're all here and we'll all (unintelligible). Now what I'd like to do is, um, go through the - go back into hypnosis again. Only this time I - I think instead of focusing on the idea of floating...

((0:58:00))

Q: ...let's focus on the idea of being heavy. Just for some reason it feels like that might be a little bit easier for you to do. You think so? Okay. And then, um, after you've gotten into that then I'm gonna ask you to switch gears and go back in time and now here's where I can make - bring up an idea. I was thinking that since you know what a safety deposit bank is in a bank and that's where we can store things and keep them there. We could ima- have you imagine that you're going into a room that's a safety deposit box and that you can leave the feelings and the thoughts in that room that you have while you're in that room. You don't have to take them back out with you. And that might give you a little bit of a - of a feeling that you don't have to be quite so upset. If that - does that - does that seem like a...

((0:59:00))

Q: ...an idea that would be helpful to you? Or would you just as soon not do that?

A: I don't care.

Q: You don't care. Let's - let's try it then. If you don't care let's try it without it and then we'll - if we needed to we can try it with. Is that okay?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay, and, uh, as I've said before I want to be real sure that I say it again. If at any time you feel like you want to stop. Like it's too much - too hard for you to recall things all you have to do is say so and we'll stop it together. Okay? Oh, one last thing that struck my mind. You said your friend Mike saw that

tan car heading towards - what's Mike's last name?

A: Siebert.

Q: Siebert? Okay.

((0:60:00))

Q: And no one else as far as you know saw the car right?

A: Well he told me during lunch.

Q: Yeah.

A: That...

Q: The next day or something?

A: Yeah.

Q: But no one else said that they also saw...

A: No.

Q: ...him wandering around. Okay, I was just curious - okay. All right, well let's do the hypnosis again only this time we're gonna get heavy instead of gettin' light. And as you sit in that position one, look up toward your eyebrows all the way up to the top of your head, two holding your eyes up close your eyelids slowly, three take a deep breath, and let it out and relax. And as you start to feel your body relaxing you can imagine that your body is just starting to feel heavier and heavier. Sort of like you're getting - your body is beginning to be made out of - out of lead. And your arms and your fingers and your shoulders...

((0:61:00))

Q: ...and your legs and your ankles and even your toes are starting to get heavier and heavier. And your muscles are strong enough to move them if you wanted to. But for the next few minutes you can just relax and the effort of moving those heavy arms and those heavy legs. And all of those things just - you don't have to do it. The chair and the floor can just take your weight and you can relax. And you're body can feel the heaviness, feel the lead weight without having to move. You don't have to do anything for the next few minutes. You can just be here. You don't have to go anywhere or do anything. You don't have to be anything. You can just be quiet.

((0:62:00))

Q: And peaceful inside. Just heavy and relaxed on the outside. Heavier and heavier. Like all the effort and all the energy for a few minutes is just draining out of your body. And as you concentrate on that feeling of heaviness I want you to listen to my voice, and also concentrate on another idea that I'm gonna describe for you in a moment. But before I describe that idea for you I want to remind you that you can speak at any time you want to either tell me something or ask me something even if it's not a part of any question or anything that I'm asking you. And especially if you decide that you're not...

((0:63:00))

Q: ...feeling comfortable, you want to stop all you have to do is tell me. And we will. Together we'll do it. Now in addition to focusing on this quiet, heavy feeling I want you to imagine that you can see the face of a clock. It might be the kind of a face of a clock you'd see on the side of a big building like a courthouse or a town hall. Or it might be the face of a clock that you'd see around your house or an alarm clock or kitchen clock. It could be any kind of a clock face. But this clock face has a very unusual thing about it. The hands on this clock can turn backwards as well as forwards. When they go forwards like they usually do that shows...

((0:64:00))

Q: ...that time is going forwards. And in this clock when the hands do the unusual thing of going backwards that shows that time is going backwards and as you watch this clock you can see that the hands stop on forward and they start to go backward. And you know that that means that time is going backwards and the minutes add up to hours and the hours add up to days and time is going backwards and you are going backwards in time. It's no longer Thursday. You are now back - it's no longer Friday, you're back to Thursday. And now it's Wednesday. I'm going backwards. The hands are going backwards. It's now Tuesday.

((0:65:00))

Q: And Monday and back to Sunday and back to Saturday and now you're back to Friday. You're back to Friday the 17th of November and it's late in the afternoon. It's after school and in fact it's just getting to be the end of basketball practice. And you are at school and you come out of basketball practice and you come out through the door and you head across the playground and you go out of the...

((0:66:00))

Q: ...playground towards the curb on the street and you begin to see some things happening. And as they happen I'd like you to tell me what you see.

A: That's enough.

Q: You can stop right here. That a boy.

((0:67:00))

Q: I'm glad you told me that you wanted to stop. Because that's what you wanted to do and that was exactly (unintelligible). Can I ask you a question about it? Was there anything that you saw when you wanted to stop that was new or different or it's just the feelings came back?

A: The feelings came back.

Q: Okay.

((0:68:00))

Q: At the beginning were you able to feel that heavy lead kind of feeling? Were you able to feel that? Good for you. Now makes me wonder whether it might be better to try it, um, with the idea that we can leave the feelings in the safety deposit box. Do you think we might try that? Or do you want to stop here? How do you feel about trying it again?

A: I want to stop.

Q: Okay, then that's what we'll do. It's real scary but.

((0:69:00))

Q: I'm just sitting here trying to - I'm trying to figure out some kind of a way - if there were a way that we could - that you could go through it without feeling the feelings again? Do you think you'd be willing to try?

((0:70:00))

A: I just don't want to relive the memories. It's hard.

Q: Okay.

((0:71:00))

Q: I think that's very understandable. Would you like to just quit for right now? I think that's the appropriate thing to do. I don't want to - before we turn the camera off I want to tell you something and I want - I want you to know that I really mean this. I think it's real brave of you and I think it's - it's, uh, I really - I really appreciate your trying and I do understand that there are things that happen to people just make them feel like it's just too much to make them go back into the feelings and I do understand that. And I really thank you for givin' it a try, okay?

A: Okay.

Q: Now let me unclip this from you so you don't have that long leash on you. Okay, so 10:58.

((0:72:00))

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

RECORDING
Q=Man
Q1=Man
Q2=Man
A=Daniel A. Rassier

A: (Smokey) barked. I'm in - mom and dad are gone. Usually I just really don't have to worry too much about (Smokey) barking. Somebody else - it's kind of - kind of selfish, but somebody else would take care of it, but I'm the only one home.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:01:00))

A: But I was getting into the habit of - when (Smokey) would - or when a car - something would happen, when my brother would come home, I'd turn off the light, so I can shine him with my spotlight, and see what they do when I do it.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So, (Smokey) barked and I turned my lights off right away, and the car came zooming in.

((0:02:00))

A: And of course then I was only thinking that I - I hope this car just turns around and leaves. And that's what it did. Turned around real fast. It didn't come up by the...

((0:03:00))

A: ...where there was the yard, like it stayed down away from the light.

Q: Did you shine it with your spotlight?

A: No, I wish I would have. I wish I would have. I wish I would have. I...

Q: It's okay, Dan.

A: I wish I would have seen that car better.

Q: It's okay.

A: I just didn't.

Q: I understand that you - you wish you had seen more.

((0:04:00))

A: I wish I would have chased it. I did that before once, but they're - by the time I get to my car, they're gone.

Q: Sure. Do you feel kind of guilty or something that you didn't?

A: Yeah. I could have stopped it from happening.

Q: What could you have stopped from happening?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: What do you think you could have stopped from happening?

A: If I would have shined the car.

Q: Uh-huh. What could you have stopped from happening with your shining the car?

((0:05:00))

A: The person in the car would have - would have known that somebody saw.

Q: Well, do you think the person in that car did something wrong that they wouldn't have wanted to be seen?

A: Yeah.

Q: What do you think they did?

A: Took Jacob.

Q: What makes you think that the person in that car did something to Jacob?

A: Because it - I don't know. It turned around so fast.

Q: Right.

A: And it was - it's so weird. It turned around like the car in the afternoon.

Q: Hm?

A: It turned around fast. And if I would have followed that car...

((0:06:00))

A: ...or something...

Q: What did that car in the nighttime look like to you? Did you see anything about it?

A: It was - it was a little car.

Q: It was a little car?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: And, uh, could you see anything about it that told you what kind of a little car it was?

A: Uh, a s- a small-shaped type.

Q: So you don't think it was a big car, like the one...

A: No.

Q: ...you saw in the afternoon?

A: Yeah, it was a little car.

Q: Okay. And, uh, could...

((0:07:00))

Q: ...you see what shape its headlights were when it turned around?

A: Uh, just single headlights. Didn't have brights on.

Q: Mm-hm. I'll give you a Kleenex if you'd like to wipe your nose.

A: Thank you.

Q: You're welcome. (Unintelligible).

A: It's all right. It just seems like I saw something in that car.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: I don't know.

Q: As you focus on that...

((0:08:00))

Q: ...car, what do you - what do you think you saw in there? As best you can see.

A: Uh, I know it was a dark car. It wasn't light. It wasn't a light car.

Q: Mm-hm.

((

A: It was a dark car.

Q: Yes.

A: Dark blue. Black.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:09:00))

A: Uh, it seems like I saw something white in the driver's seat.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But it doesn't make sense that I saw white.

Q: What doesn't make sense, Dan?

A: Well, I - now it doesn't make sense, because he wouldn't want to be seen, he wouldn't want to wear white, but maybe he wanted to be seen, so that they would stop.

((0:10:00))

A: So that the kids would see him, and they would stop if he was wearing white. Uh, but maybe then it was a re- a reflection.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: In the glass from the yard light. I don't know if there were two people in there. It seemed like there was, but I don't know.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I ran to the other room, and watched it go up the hill.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It drove fast.

((0:11:00))

A: At the time I just thought boy, that was fast, and I went back to work.

Q: Mm-hm. It seems like something's upsetting you about it now.

A: It's not something, it's I remember chasing a car once, and never found it. And I wish I would have - my car was outside. It could have been a good time. It - it wasn't in the garage.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I could have got in the car, and gone up there, and maybe it wouldn't have happened.

Q: So you're wishing you could have done something to protect Jacob, right?

A: Uh-huh.

((0:12:00))

A: Something, anything. Anything. But then it would have happened to somebody else maybe, somewhere else. I'm just...

Q: I think you wish - your wanting to help Jacob is a very generous and very caring thing. And it seems to me like you're a person who - who cares.

A: Yeah.

Q: And so, maybe you've gone a little too far in your caring, thinking that somehow you didn't do your responsibility. Maybe that's going a little too far in this situation. You feel responsible, that you should have protected Jacob.

A: I wish I...

((0:13:00))

A: ...I wish I'd catch that guy.

Q: Yeah.

A: I wish I could help.

Q: I believe you wish you could help. But it's - it's not - how you're reacting and you're shaking, you really feel upset at yourself for not having been a help.

A: Yeah.

Q: And I think maybe that's going too far though. You did everything that a person normally would. You looked out the window, you wondered why somebody was turning around, you noticed that they were turning around awfully fast. But chasing them, as you say, they were probably gonna be long gone before you could have gotten the keys in your car.

A: Yeah, but if he turned around before he had Jacob, and I drove up there and saw his car...

((0:14:00))

A: ...sitting there, he would have drove off, and Jacob would have been okay. And nothing would have happened, nothing. Right there anyway.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Unless he just wanted Jacob, and would have got him sooner or later, no matter what. But then I would have gotten a better look at the car, maybe even the license number.

Q: What time of night was Jacob - Jacob taken - of day, what time was it? Was it in the evening or the daytime?

A: They told me it was at night.

Q: So you think, in your mind somehow, that small car is (unintelligible) taken, right?

A: Yeah.

((0:15:00))

A: And I - I know I'm drawing conclusions that maybe didn't even happen then. But it just seems - the way things happened, it just seemed too coincidental.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: That a car turned around like that, that fast, took - or, uh, drove up the hill.

Q: I can understand how you'd draw that conclusion. I can understand why you'd connect them. The only part that I'm just telling you my thought about is that feeling guilty, that you didn't do something more, I think is going a little far.

A: Yeah, it's a hindsight.

((0:16:00))

A: Cars turn around, and usually I don't do anything anyway.

Q: No, and usually they haven't done anything except...

A: Right.

Q: ...they're curious or lost their way, or looked for a shortcut.

A: Right.

Q: So I can understand how you feel...

A: It's...

Q: ...especially (unintelligible).

A: It's just my wish.

Q: Wish to do something that would be helpful?

A: Right.

Q: Would have prevented it?

A: Right.

Q: I can understand that. As you watch that car turn around, could you see the taillights on the car?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: What shape were they?

A: They were bright.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And I could see the dust behind them when they drove up. I can just remember that they were bright.

((0:17:00))

A: Both of them on each side. They didn't go across the middle or anything.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Not much to go on. That's - I should know cars better. I should know.

Q: You've put a lot of shoulds on yourself.

A: Yeah.

Q: Somebody once said to me, "Thou shalt not should on myself." Could you see a light or any shape...

((0:18:00))

Q: ...where the license plate would be on the back of that car?

A: Uh, I'm thinking about that - something in the windshield when I saw it.

Q: Okay. You stay on the windshield.

A: I wonder if - I never thought of this before. I wonder if Jacob had a flashlight in the car. Who had the flashlight of the boys? Did Jacob bring it with him in the car? Was he shining it in the car? Was that what I saw? Did I see a light shining in the car?

((0:19:00))

A: I don't know. I'm trying to - I'm trying to figure it out. I don't know enough to figure it out.

Q: I suspect you're right about that, and you need to turn it over to a higher power and a larger process.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: 'Cause the most that you can contribute and the very best you can contribute is what you saw, as carefully and as accurately as you saw it. You're working real hard, and trying very hard. That's the most that anyone could ask.

((0:20:00))

A: The car shined - it shined - it was shiny.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But, uh...

Q: And it looked dark in color?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And small, rather than big.

A: Yeah, it wasn't the same car.

Q: Right. Did it look like a small American car or a small foreign car?

A: Oh.

Q: Any impression?

A: A Chevette. Like a Chevette.

Q: Okay.

A: I don't know what year you would - if they're all the same shape or not. Uh, but then how could I see it that good? It was dark out there, but I could see the shape of it.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: It would be nice to...

((0:21:00))

A: ...find out all the right answers.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And see how many of my answers are really the right answers. (Smokey) barked until the car was gone, and then (Smokey) didn't bark anymore. And then I...

((0:22:00))

A: ...then I went back to my stuff, and I kept doing stuff. And then finally, I thought I'd better get to bed. And I - I must have gone downstairs, and then I went to bed. I was awake and then I heard (Smokey) bark. I didn't go to sleep right away.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And (Smokey) barked and then I was worried. Why was (Smokey) barking now?

((0:23:00))

A: Another car must be coming down the hill. But no car came in the yard. No car came in the yard, and that's weird. And I thought maybe it's turning around up on the hill. Sometimes they do that, they don't come in the yard.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: They turn around on the hill. And I looked out the door, and I don't know, someone was up there with a spotlight, shining the wood. And I - I jumped out of bed, well, I was out of bed, but I jumped, thought oh, boy.

((0:24:00))

A: What's going on now? I better find out. No one's home. They probably knew mom and dad weren't gonna be home, and it would be a good time - they probably don't know that I live at home, and they think no one's here. But apparently it doesn't, yeah, they - they think nobody's home. I tried to find, uh, pants to put on or something, I can't remember what I put on. I couldn't

get my shoes on, and I had the wrong - it was all mixed up, I couldn't get anything on right. I was so nervous.

((0:25:00))

A: My heart was going, and I just looked out again, and there were lights there again. What are they doing up there? Oh, boy, this could mean trouble. Scared me. Should I call 911? No, I don't want to - I never did that before. That might make a big trouble, big mess. I don't want to call 911 for this. No. I got my shoes on, but they were tied. I was shaking. I went downstairs. Somewhere I looked out and now there are two lights up there. What are they doing? They're gonna take all the wood. They can load up all that wood...

((0:26:00))

A: ...it's real nice wood. It's easy to see, people see it and they load it up. Paranoid. You know, when I saw two lights up there and they were shining the wood and everything, I finally - I looked out the bathroom window, they're still up there, and I dialed 911. And they knew right away who I was, and what - told me right away not to worry. That those were just police officers looking for a lost child. And there are gonna be choppers flying around pretty soon. They're looking for a - a lost boy, and I shouldn't worry about anything. I shouldn't worry about anything.

((0:27:00))

A: So I thought oh, maybe I can go help. And I put a - I think I put a coat on and I went up by the two police officers. Yeah. I shined my spotlight on the way pu there in the ditch and that. And they shined me in the face. And I - I'm not sure exactly what they said, but I said something about a lost boy, and they said he was - no, he's not lost, he was kidnapped. Yeah, he was kidnapped, and I go, "Oh, really?"

((0:28:00))

A: And then I told them about the car I saw turn around that evening. But I - I didn't mention that car in the afternoon. I never thought of that car. That - I just thought about that car in the after- the car at night, the one that turned around that night when it was dark outside, so fast. I wasn't sure about the time, but it was pretty late when it turned around. They had a dog with them, a nice big German Shepherd or something, and I said - I was cold, I was shivering, I remember I was shaking.

((0:29:00))

A: And they - it sounded like I couldn't help much. They figured the boy was gone already, and I went back to the house, and went back to bed. But (Smokey) kept barking, and I kept like - well, I never really went to sleep. (Smokey) kept barking at all the lights and stuff up - beyond the woods. She knows something's going on, and I, uh, I looked out the window once in awhile, and I tried to go back to sleep, and then a helicopter comes and shines all over, and I think...

((0:30:00))

A: ...it's going all - all over the place. They must think that boy is still - still around here. They must - why would they be looking around here if that boy was taken away? They must think he's somewhere around here yet. And I watch the helicopter, and I think well, I don't - I don't want to get - do the wrong thing, and go maybe where I shouldn't go. But then I - that helicopter flies all over, I go back to bed. I wake up again - I don't know if I was really asleep, and it's down in the gravel pit...

((0:31:00))

A: ...shining down there a lot. And there are police officers, a lot of them walking down there. And I think well, they must think he's around here somewhere, and why aren't they looking in the buildings if he might be around here? So I - I thought I can't get to sleep anyway, I'm gonna go look too. I took my spotlight, and I went in the woods, and I thought the tree house would be a good hiding spot, and I climbed up to the top and looked in. It was interesting seeing the tree house. I haven't been up there for a long time. Nobody was there.

Q: Let me ask you, Dan. If you can come back...

((0:32:00))

Q: ...one last time to the car.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Pulling into the yard.

A: Yeah. The one at night?

Q: The one at night. (Smokey) barked, and what happened then?

A: I turned - I wanted to get a good look at that car, because sometimes they - they - with the light on, you can't see outside, and they can see you looking at

them.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So, I - I turned my light off.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And it was off before the car came into view, and I - I looked out the window...

((0:33:00))

A: ...and it turned around real quick, and it turned around the same way the other car did. It didn't - it didn't come in - well, most cars turn around counterclockwise from what - yeah. And both of these turned counter - counterclockwise, but they did it real quickly and not in a - not in a circle, more of a U, 'cause they were very quick in their back in. Came around quick. So then they turned around. They went down. The house is up here, the window. They went down and around...

((0:34:00))

A: ...and out. They did that quick.

Q: And what can you see of that car in the dark, second car?

A: It was all dark.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: There was - something caught my eye about what I saw through the front windshield. I remember thinking about it, just hardly...

((0:35:00))

A: ...thinking about it, but seeing something there that was something different about the front windshield, something white. Something inside the car. There was only room for two people in that front seat, front part. It wasn't a big car. I don't know if it makes any difference, but it just...

((0:36:00))

A: ...seems like I saw a mirror, like the mirror was - ah, that's guessing I think. The mirror's stuck on the window. Maybe the rearview mirror stuck on - stuck

up on the front window, and then comes down. It wasn't into the ceiling of the car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Uh, how could I see that?

Q: What's important is what's in your mind, what you see in your mind.

((0:37:00))

A: The car was in a hurry. It turned around quick.

((0:38:00))

A: At that time I can just, uh...worried about where that car was gonna go, uh, it went up the hill. And it went fast up the hill. I drive fast up the hill too. It must have come down the hill fast too. 'Cause by the time (Smokey) was...

((0:39:00))

A: ...there wasn't much - there wasn't time. I - I saw that car turn around, come - come into view, but a lot of times when (Smokey) barks, it takes awhile for that car to come in view. I didn't have to wait long for this car. So, I guess what I'm saying is - I never thought of that before, that it - how quick it all happened. (Smokey) barked, turned off the light. Boom, I looked out the window, the car was there as I looked out. So it must have been coming down that hill fast too. It must have known there was a hill there.

((0:40:00))

A: At night it looks like - well, you got to be a pretty bad driver to drive off the hill. But at night it looks like the road goes straight there, but it goes around the corner.

Q: So is there anything else about that car that - that would describe it or tell anything about it? You say it was kind of like a Chevette. That sort of a shape?

A: Yeah.

Q: It was shiny?

A: Shiny.

Q: And it's dark?

A: Dark. Uh...

Q: Taillights are one on each side, rather than something going all the way across?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

((0:41:00))

Q: Can we go back to car number 1 for a second?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: There are two questions I'd like to ask you. One is you said that when you're - that the - the windows on the side in the back were kind of fancy shaped?

A: Yeah.

Q: Is that - what - what shape are they, are they round, are they square, are they rectangles, or triangles, or something else?

A: I'm talking about the - the big rear window.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: It was, uh, a rectangle.

Q: Okay. And it - it came straight down rather than slanted?

A: Straight down.

((0:42:00))

A: Bad - bad - to me, when I see a car like that, I think of, um, it goes along with a big fancy kind of like - not designed for gas mileage.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: Because it - it sucks - it - it sucks the air in there, and then it - it's not aerodynamic.

Q: Uh-huh. So is that window set in a little bit rather than smooth with the surface?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Oh, okay. And it's rectangular?

A: Yeah.

Q: And it's straight up and down?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And what about the rear window of the car? Did it go all the way across the back, or was it only part of it or...

A: You mean the side windows?

Q: The back window, all the way in the back, the backend window, the rear window.

A: The rear...

((0:42:00))

A: ...that's the one I was talking about.

Q: Okay.

A: That's the one that's rectangle.

Q: Oh, okay.

A: And it goes down, kind of like, uh, not - not a - not a big window.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: You know, it's like - it's not that much glass area, compared to a lot of cars.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's actually rather small.

Q: What about the side windows?

A: Boy, I...

((0:44:00))

A: My general picture is that - what was that word you said before? Impression.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Is that it had those little what they call opera windows on it.

Q: And what shape were they?

A: Kind of like a, uh, little - little rectan - uh, upright rectangles.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: That's my impression.

Q: Okay. And was the roof of the car the same color as the rest of the car?

A: Uh, I just keep thinking that in my mind it's...

((0:45:00))

A: ...it's got a white - a half-white, uh, uh, landau roof.

Q: Vinyl - vinyl roof?

A: Yeah, kind of like when - but it wasn't - I don't think it was the whole top roof like that though. Um...

((0:46:00))

Q: And you said that on the trunk of that car that you saw during the day, it had some molding on it or some shapes on it?

A: Yeah. It had that fancy backend.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And...

Q: What shape was the molding, or where was it on the trunk?

A: It's, uh...

((0:47:00))

A: ...seemed - yeah, it was a long time ago already. It...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...it - I kept thinking the days after that it was in the middle, something - a crease in the middle or, um, like did it come to a point? Like - like, uh, like a, you know, it slant upwards and then it met in the middle.

Q: And did it look like it was the same color as the trunk?

A: The trunk - you mean the whole car?

((0:48:00))

Q: Was the molding for this special fancy stuff that...

A: No, it wasn't molding. It was just, uh, the way the - the - the body was, the steel was molded.

Q: Ah, so the shape of the trunk lid kind of came to a crease in the middle?

A: Yeah, kind of.

Q: Ah.

A: It's - it like fans, you know, it wasn't just flat.

Q: It wasn't just flat? Okay. I misunderstood. The picture I had in my mind wasn't fitting yours, so that's why I thought it was molded. I'm glad you corrected me. The general outline (unintelligible). Now back a little while ago, I asked you to try to remember the shape of the grill that you saw, so that we could ask you to try to draw, in general, what that shape looked...

((0:49:00))

Q: ...like to you. So if you can, in your mind, take a look again at that grill, 'cause in a moment, we're gonna come back out of hypnosis. I'm gonna ask you to draw, as best you can, the shape of the grill that you see. I'll give you a moment to look at that in your mind's eye.

A: They weren't - they weren't circles. They were kind of like octagons, little

octagons.

Q: Okay.

A: Yeah. Lots of straight sides and then put them all together, so that there were a lot of them on the front.

((0:50:00))

Q: Mm-hm. And that's what made up the grill?

A: Yeah, it was kind of a dumb design, boring.

Q: Okay. All right. Now, in a moment, I'm going to count backwards from three again, and as I do, you can follow along listening. Three, get ready. Two, let your eyes begin to open. One, you can open your eyes, and start to feel yourself, and your energy's returned. The heaviness in your arms and your legs, and your head and your neck, and your shoulders, and you can begin to move your body around, begin to let your eyes open, and begin to feel your normal...

((0:51:00))

Q: ...sense of energy and control and movement coming back to you. You may find yourself - that you're a little bit stiff from sitting in one position so long. And you can open your eyes when you're ready. And you can look up, you can look around, move. So whatever way you'd like to. Finding it hard to get around? What are you feeling right now?

((0:52:00))

A: Uh, I'm kind of lost.

Q: Are you? Lost in what kind of way? Do you need some help in making the switch?

A: I don't want help out.

Q: Okay.

A: It was - yeah. It was like traveling back in time.

Q: Yes, it was like traveling back in time, 'cause that's exactly what you were doing...

((0:53:00))

Q: ...and you can take your time.

A: I don't want to go back. I want to see the car. I want to see that car.

Q: Okay.

A: But I can't, I tried.

Q: You tried very hard, and you put a lot of energy and a lot of time into it.

A: I should just - if I snap - try to snap out of this...

Q: You don't need to snap out of anything. You can take your time making the shift.

A: I just have to be sure that I saw everything I could.

Q: That's what I thought. A sense of responsibility means to you that you don't want to let go until you've done everything...

((0:54:00))

Q: ...you can, doesn't it?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: You're a very responsible man, aren't you?

A: Oh, I try to be.

Q: Yeah, that's pretty clear. Yeah. Did you know Jacob?

A: No.

Q: But he lived in your community, didn't he?

A: Yeah.

Q: And you feel some responsibility for Jacob?

A: It just makes me so mad.

Q: I don't blame you. It makes a lot of people mad.

A: I'll be all right.

Q: Oh, I know you will. I think your tears and your feelings are very appropriate, and very understandable.

A: I didn't think I'd do this.

Q: Does it bother you that you are? 'Cause it seems real normal to me.

((0:55:00))

Q: It seems normal to me that a person who feels strongly and feels - and is a responsible person, would have some real strong feelings about something, uh, irrational and unfair, and, uh, so very, very evil, like what happened to Jacob. It seems to me that - that it's very natural to have strong feelings about that.

A: Yeah.

((0:56:00))

Q: What are you feeling right now?

A: I'm trying to see that car. I'm trying to go in the car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Or I'm trying to see if Jacob's giving any kind of a signal, or giving...

((0:57:00))

A: ...a hint, what's happening.

Q: Now one thing that you can think about is, is that this is not the only time that you can go back into your memory to try to remember what you saw.

A: But I'm so far - I'm so far into my memory.

Q: Uh-huh. Would you like a fresh Kleenex?

A: Thank you.

Q: You're welcome.

A: It's like when you go on a trip...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...and you're over there, you fly way over there.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: You want to do everything you can, because when you go back, you have to make that whole...

((0:58:00))

A: ...trip again.

Q: Yeah.

A: So you try to do it all the first time.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But I - but I don't see - I've thought about it enough, I don't see how I'm gonna see anything else. I'll only invent something, or maybe I saw something that I just can't remember.

Q: People do not see things that they can't remember. Let me tell you about any - listen while I tell you a true story.

A: Yeah.

Q: I worked with the FBI on another case, um, probably six or seven years ago now.

((0:59:00))

Q: And, um, there were three young high school girls walking up the street, and they saw a young woman being pushed out of a restaurant, and into a car. And then one of the girls said to another one, "She's being kidnapped. Run up there and look at the license plate," and the - so one of the girls ran up towards the car, and it started driving away, and she was looking as best she could at the license plate, and she couldn't remember what it was. So, we did hypnosis with her, and in hypnosis she couldn't see the license plate, and she couldn't see the license plate. So when she came back out of hypnosis, I picked up a book that was on my desk, and it was a paperback book with big letters in print to spell out the title. And I held it up about ten feet away from her, I held

it up and said, "Can you read the title on this book?" and she said, "No, I don't have my...

((1:00:00))

Q: ...glasses on." I asked her if she had her glasses on the night of the kidnapping, and she said no. That's why she couldn't see the license plate, 'cause it wasn't possible to see it.

A: Yeah.

Q: I think you're in a little bit...

A: Yeah, I...

Q: ...of the same jam she was in.

A: I couldn't see.

Q: It was dark.

A: Yeah.

Q: And you were a long way from it, and you've seen and recalled the best you can, and boy, you've taken a trip. It became a very vivid, very real, very intense trip back in time. And you worked really hard. I've been very impressed, and I would think that you would feel kind of exhausted.

A: Well, I didn't run today.

Q: So this is instead of running?

A: Yeah, yeah.

Q: Well, I'd say that in some ways you've worked at least as hard as running.

A: I didn't run yesterday either.

((1:02:00))

A: I got to run a lot tomorrow.

Q: Well, I think you've done a very responsible job, and - and you worked very, very hard, and I'd like - I'd like you to ease up on yourself a little bit. And

part of the tension you're feeling, I imagine, is, is that you're probably feeling guilty.

A: I don't know. I just - I shake when I - and I shake when I, uh, uh, when I, uh...I just got to let go and try to - try to just convince myself that I, uh, I wish there was something else I could do.

Q: I can tell that you wish that there was something else that you could do.

A: I should just jump in a pool, that would wake me up, right?

Q: Well, that's possible. Another way is, is can you relax your grip on the chair? When you loosen your grip on the chair, sometimes (unintelligible). Put your fingers just flat out on your pants, and I'd like you to count with me. Let's focus on counting backwards from 25.

A: Oh. It's so far.

Q: Well, that gives you enough time and space to make the change. Now I'll count, and you can count along with me...

((1:03:00))

Q: ...either silently or out loud. Let's put all of our focus on starting at 25. 24.

A: 24, 23.

Q: 22.

A: 22.

Q: 21, 20. 19.

A: 19, 18.

Q: 18, 17.

A: 17.

Q: 16. 15.

A: What should I do when we get to zero?

Q: You can allow yourself to relax and open your eyes. 14, 13, 12, 11, ten...

((1:04:00))

Q: ...nine, eight, seven, six, five, four, three, two, one, zero. Another thing I want to do is, would you like a drink of water?

A: No.

Q: You - I think if I had been...

A: You'd have...

Q: That's because the side of the chair, right?

A: You're gonna have to clean that chair.

Q: I'll tell you what, we'll take care of that.

A: I'll get...

Q: Wayzata - the Wayzata Police Department can solve the case of the sticky Kleenex.

Q1: That's all right.

Q: Yeah, your prints are on it.

A: Yeah.

Q: They'll get you.

A: I got to try to open my eyes.

Q: Yeah.

((1:05:00))

Q: Were you surprised at how intensely you could go in hypnosis? Or did you kind of suspect you could?

A: I didn't - at first, I almost gave up.

Q: Yeah. That's when we were doing the floating? Or even after we were doing the heavy...

A: When we got to do the heaviness, I got that feeling of really being - heavy

hands.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And - and thinking oh, this can't be working. And - but then my - my mind went black and I - it felt like my mind was in a - that it was getting blacker and blacker, and blacker, and I could see sort of spirals.

Q: Mm-hm.

((1:06:00))

A: And - and my - I could - I - I felt like I was really kind of right there.

Q: Yeah.

A: But not really. It wasn't as clear as if I could have pictures or look at pictures of it happening.

Q: Right.

A: Like the - the grill isn't - the grill isn't real clear yet.

Q: Now I'm wondering if you could draw, in general, the shape of that grill that you see. You think you could begin to open your eyes so that you could do that? Are they sealed shut?

A: Uh, maybe would help.

Q: I'll tell you another true story. Hey, look at that. You opened them, congratulations.

((1:07:00))

Q: I'll you another true story about someone I worked with. This was not with the FBI or law enforcement, but he came to me to use hypnosis in some therapy that we were doing. And this person was one of the tensest human beings I have ever had. She had been physically abused as a child, and she never felt like she could let down her guard. Always was on guard. Well, it turns out she could go into very deep hypnosis, and it was the only time in her life she'd ever felt relaxed.

A: Oh.

Q: So guess what? She didn't want to come back out. We used to have - for an

hour's meeting, we used to have to start half an hour before I wanted to end the session to bring her out, because she'd sit there and argue that her eyes had grown shut, somebody must have...

A: It's 10:30?

Q: Yeah.

A: Oh, my gosh.

Q: You see how long you've been working?

A: I was doing that for three hours?

Q: That's about right. Somewhere between - between two - two and a half and three.

((1:08:00))

A: No wonder I'm shaking.

Q: It's no wonder you're shaking, that's what I was trying to tell you.

Q1: That's right.

Q: I was really concerned...

Q1: Yeah.

Q: ...earlier that we might be wearing you out. You have put so much energy into this, Dan. You're obviously trying so hard.

A: I tried.

Q: And you've got (unintelligible).

Q1: No one here doubting that.

Q: Yeah.

Q1: We're all worn out.

Q: Yeah.

Q1: You wore us all out.

A: Oh, boy.

Q: Were you, uh, sweating?

A: I'm kind of sweaty.

Q: Yeah. Well, it's a lot of energy (unintelligible). Would you like some - a drink of water or something?

A: No.

Q: Don't worry about the Kleenex. I don't know what made it stick, but...

A: I know what that means. Runny nose.

Q: Maybe it's (unintelligible), I didn't know it worked that well.

A: Oh, I got a stiff neck.

((1:09:00))

Q: Yeah, you know why?

Q2: (Unintelligible).

Q: Yeah.

Q1: Yeah.

A: I knew when I was doing it, that boy, my neck is gonna be stiff.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: But I couldn't make it go up.

Q: Yeah.

A: It felt better down at the time.

Q: Well, that's because of the heaviness that we had worked on creating.

A: Yeah.

Q: How much you figure you weighed there for a while?

A: Boy, it was weird. Sometime I weighed - it - I - when I was - I didn't move my hands until you gave me the handkerchief.

Q: That's right.

A: And I - I couldn't move my hands. They were right here.

Q: Yeah.

A: And it just felt like, boy.

Q: You could really get rid of a headache that way, couldn't you?

A: Yeah. Yeah.

((1:10:00))

A: And then it - it seemed like it was getting lighter, and then all of a sudden I thought boy, I don't want to lose this feeling. And then all of a sudden, (whew), this is - when I started remembering things, then it became more real.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Then I - I thought boy, I'm taking too long when I do this, you know.

Q: Hm-mm.

A: Giving you all a...

Q: Everybody has their own pace. Some people go on so fast, I sometimes can't keep up, and other people take a long slow pace. Everybody does it their own way.

A: Yeah.

Q: There's no right or wrong. Beginning to feel like you're back here in (unintelligible) now or...

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

((1:11:00))

A: Sorry, you guys.

Q2: No, that's fine.

Q1: Hey, you did this, uh, on your own for us. We really appreciate it. (Unintelligible) to be sorry for anything. No apologies, we really appreciate you going through things. That's the whole idea. As strong as you felt, you probably didn't need (unintelligible).

A: Uh, I...

Q1: Really remarkable.

A: I've cried before about it. Not - never in public.

Q: (Unintelligible).

A: Yeah.

Q: 'Cause obviously you feel real strongly and - and, uh, that's okay.

A: Yeah.

Q: It really is. It is.

A: I don't think I could open my eyes unless I went like that. It was like...

Q: All right.

A: ...I couldn't control.

((1:12:00))

Q: Would you like to get up and walk around, or do you feel it's better sitting there for a while?

A: I'm all right.

Q: I - I think - I think the - the interview part is over, and...

Q1: I think so too.

Q: ...should we turn the camera off?

Q1: Okay.

HYPNOSIS WITH DANIEL RASSIER
Q=Dr. (John Ritz)
Q1=Special Agt. (Keith Cunningham)
Q2=Agent (Chris Fryhauffer)
Q3=Special Agt. (D. Levine)
A=Daniel Rassier

Q: ...feeling, it's, uh, you know, I will say it's time for the - it's about 7:25 or about 7:24 on the camera and it's, uh, Monday evening, the, uh, 27th of November, and the first thing I'd like to do is, uh, acknowledge that we're videotaping this, and you're aware of that and you're okay with that?

A: Right.

Q: Okay. And, uh, let's identify who also - I'm Dr. (John Ritz). You are?

A: Dan Rassier.

Q: And?

Q1: Special Agent (Keith Cunningham).

Q2: Agent (Chris Fryhauffer).

Q3: And Special Agent (D. Levine).

Q: Okay. And, um, we're going to, um, be talking with Dan about, um, some things that he saw or whatever. I am totally in the dark as to why you're here this evening, which is on purpose. That way I can't ask leading questions.

A: Okay.

Q: And, um, as I understand it, you are here in order to try to, um, en-enhance your recall...

((0:01:00))

Q: ...of some details you saw about something, and I'm a - a consultant to the

FBI, I'm a psychologist, and I do a lot of work with the use of hypnosis, and so what I'd like to do is sort of describe for you an overview of how we tend to conduct this sort of an interview, such as some idea what's coming, which might be nice from your point of view. Um, being sort of artificially - chop it into three chapters. Chapter 1 is where you and I will just sit here, and you'll tell me whatever it was that you saw or heard or witnessed in some setting, so that I can then know roughly what to ask you questions about. Okay. And then we'll talk about hypnosis, what it is and isn't, answer any questions you have, and if you're comfortable with that, then we'll proceed to find out how hypnotizable you are. And then if you're hypnotizable, then - and - and you're - and you are comfortable with the idea after you've been hypnotized, and the whole thing seems okay to you, then we'll try to have you go...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...into hypnosis and go through those same events to see whether that can allow you to recall anything that you're having trouble remembering, or remember some additional details, whatever it is that would help the investigation. And we'll wind that up and be done, so that's Chapter 1, then 2, then 3.

A: Okay.

Q: Does that make sense?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay, okay. So if you would give me, um, you don't have to go into the detail undoubtedly you must have in your interviews with the Agents from the Bureau and whoever else at various times, but if you could give me an idea of what day and approximately what time of day you saw whatever it was you saw, so that I can sort of get into the right...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...kind of ballpark to know what to be asking about.

A: Well, the Sunday, uh, that Jacob was abducted, the 22nd, I believe. Uh...

Q3: Of October, yeah.

A: Of October, saw - I saw a car turn around.

((0:03:00))

A: The Agents, you know, are trying to pinpoint me down on the time. I think our final decision was maybe that it had to be somewhere maybe between 11:30 and 2 o'clock, I saw a car turn around quick, very quickly in our - our farmyard, and I was typing at the time, and, uh, I turned around very quickly and I - I saw it turn around in the yard, and I saw it go up the hill. It was a big car, light tan car. Um, and I - I've talked to them about maybe what kind of car it could have been since then.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Um...

Q: What is your best impression at this point?

A: Um, I - as far as trying to pin it down?

Q: Yeah.

A: Um...

Q: You've got a sense of it?

A: ...I told - I told a couple of the guys that I thought it - it could have been like a...

((0:04:00))

A: ...a Monte Carlo. Uh, I said the year 1973. Um, and my vision is that it was just one of these really big cars with a big front end and, uh, and a short backend, or, uh...

Q: I think you said a moment ago that it was tan?

A: Right. It was, uh, a light tan - tan, and I thought it was - my impression was that it was a dirty, dirty, like gravel - on gravel roads or something like that. Um, I - I even thought it could have been even a - a off white or something and been dirty from gravel roads, I thought of that already too, so all I know is that it was a light color, and...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...and I said to them that I - I - I had thoughts...

((0:05:00))

A: ...in my mind that it was maybe a - a - what did they call it, a la- a leather roof, uh...

Q: Oh, yeah.

A: ...landau?

Q: Landau, yeah.

A: Landau roof, uh, a white type thing. Round headlights. I - I was - my mind was telling me something that...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...those headlights seemed to be - I saw the front of the car when it turned around and the back of the car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And license plates, I can't say, I really can't, I don't have a picture of that at all.

Q: Do you have an impression of how many headlights there were? I mean obviously I'm referring to two or four.

A: Yeah, I - I thought there were two.

Q: Okay.

A: I - that's my thought.

Q: Any - any sense of whether it's a two-door or four-door car?

A: My sense is that it was a two-door. Um...

((0:06:00))

A: ...drove very fast. It turned around...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...very quickly, that's why - those were the - there were only two cars that I remember turning around - turning around that day, was that car and then the - the one at night.

Q: Mm-hm. So there was also one at night?

A: Right, and that car was - like I told the guys on the way down, can't give you much on that except that I - I don't think it was the same car as in the afternoon because it gave me the impression of being a smaller car, and a dark car. If it would have been the same car that turned around in the afternoon, I think I would have remembered that, I would have thought yeah, that's the same - same shape. I can see the shape but it's - it's blacked out. There's a yard light but it's like - I can see the car turning around, I had my lights off before it came into the yard, and then I also watched that car go up the hill. And that one was driving fast too - not as fast as the one in the afternoon, but it was driving...

((0:07:00))

A: ...fast enough to make me go boy, you know

Q: Mm-hm.

A: This guy's driving fast.

Q: Just for my information, is your farmyard one that cars would turn around in with any frequency?

A: Um...

Q: From where you're located or turnoffs or something?

A: ...they do it, but it - it's - it's like, um, they never - I - I can't say I remember cars turning around that fast.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And they both did it in the same day, like wow, you know.

Q: And did they come up into your yard and make a u-turn and go back out, or did they pull...

A: They...

Q: ...in, drive and backing out?

A: They - they do a - a quick u-turn.

Q: Right in the yard?

A: Mm-hm. And, uh, they both did it in the - the same style there.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: You know, to me they were different cars, but they did it in such a similar style, real quick and...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...same area of the yard.

Q: Okay.

((0:08:00))

A: Uh, the car at night, I remember getting some sort of vision of the - the front windshield, like a reflection of something from the yard, like - and I mentioned on the way down that I thought I - even that like a shiny reflection quickly from the car as it turned around. I can kind of remember that - that quick flash or whatever when it turns around.

Q: That car that you saw in the evening, as you saw it going away, did you see any picture of the shape of the taillights at all?

A: Um, I - I saw it go up the hill, and I saw the taillights, I mean that's really all you could see, but I...

Q: Yeah.

A: ...and the headlights, I - I can't say...

Q: Okay.

A: ...really.

Q: Um, I'm sure that you must have already been asked this question, but...

((0:09:00))

Q: ...on that car that you saw during the daytime, somewhere between 11:30 and 2:00, uh, did you see any - did you notice anything about any damage or unusual things on the fenders or the sides, uh, signs of a - of an accident or a crumpled, um, bodywork in any place?

A: Can't recall anything like that. I - I - when it was going up the hill, I can kind of think, you know, after, you know, this came down, where I'm thinking that picture in my mind with the landau roof, and did it - do you call them opera windows?

Q: I guess that's...

A: Are they little - I'm trying to remem...

Q: The little - little...

A: I'm not sure about that, but I remember have - having the feeling as it was going up the hill, kind of like that - that bottom, uh - to me, I drive a little Datsun, and I - I can remember having a feeling of seeing this car go up the hill and go...

((0:10:00))

A: ...kind of like look at that big - that big pig car, you know.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: This real big thing, you know, driving real fast.

Q: Mm-hm. What about, um, any impressions of the driver in that car in the noon, early afternoon frame?

A: Um, my - my, uh, what - what - you called it something before, where you're not sure but it's just your kind of...

Q: Your impression?

A: My impression was that it was one guy in the car, a guy, because it just seems like, um, bigger, bigger guy or - and at night I - it'd be only a wild guess at like...

Q: Um, you have any impression of his face or upper body...

((0:11:00))

Q: ...at all in that first car, during the day?

A: No, I...

Q: Just so I can - I can get more of an idea, what if you're sitting inside your

house, you see this car through the window, right?

A: Uh-huh, second story.

Q: You're on the second floor?

A: Kind of looking - actually, even to see the license plate I would have to - I'd have to be really sharp, like if I would have been looking for the license plate, I would have had to have really been sharp to pick it out.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Um, so I'm not like really close to it.

Q: Right. I was gonna ask roughly how far, uh, away do you think you were?

A: Um, the nearest point would have been a hundred feet, 90 feet.

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:12:00))

Q: And were you in the same place, uh, when the second car came through?

A: Same exact window.

Q: Okay. Up there still typing?

A: Well, yeah, I was typing - at that particular time I could have been shuffling something around.

Q: Yeah. Okay. Unless there's something either of you guys think of left out in the general sense to point out from there?

Q3: We talked about on the way down and I forgot, so you said the time that this occurred at night?

A: Yeah, I thought it was - my - my time was - as I found out later was a little off from when I thought. It was kind of like a big void in there, or when I found out what happened, I - I thought it was - I saw the car between 9:00 and 10:00. It just...

((0:13:00))

A: ...seemed to be the time. Uh, I couldn't say - I wouldn't say - I couldn't say

9:30 or anything like that, it's just like...

Q: It's somewhere in the 9:00 to 10:00...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...evening range? Okay.

Q2: I heard there were - were there two or three cars that you saw?

A: I saw two.

Q2: Okay.

A: Two cars.

Q2: All right.

A: One in the afternoon...

Q2: One in the evening?

A: ...and one in the evening.

Q2: Okay.

Q: All right. Well, that's Chapter 1 for me. That gives me enough to now ask you questions based on, you know, what you've told me.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So, let's start with Chapter 2, which is talk a little bit about hypnosis. Have you had any exposure to hypnosis of any kind?

A: Um, I've just - I've got to some, uh, I got - I went to last year or two years ago at St. Cloud State.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: A guy - I don't recall the name, came in and had students come up and boom, boom, boom, boom...

Q: Mm-hm.

((0:14:00))

A: ...they were all like, you know, under his control.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: It's kind of hard for me to believe, but it looked pretty convincing, yeah.

Q: Was the demonstration in a class, or was it...

A: It was, uh...

Q: ...uh...

A: ...I guess, uh, what would you call it? A program at night.

Q: Oh.

A: Lot of people.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Anybody could come.

Q: Just sort of an open...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay.

A: Kind of a fun thing where he had them do crazy things, and I've listened to some video cassettes and...

Q: Yeah.

A: ...um, in fact I have one in my car right now, it kind of talks about stress, uh, something about stress.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And it talks about hypnotizing. Haven't listened to it all.

Q: Do you - do you have some questions you'd like to ask right out front, or would you like me to sort of give you a - a little bit of a standard spiel that sets the framework, uh, for how I understand hypnosis works? I'd be happy to...

((0:15:00))

Q: ...go either way here.

A: Um, well, do you think it would help - is it gonna, uh, maybe help me remember something that I've never even thought I'd remember, or - or...

Q: In some very few - and what'd I'd have to say dramatic cases, um, people have come up with details of something that they have no previous recollection of. More often, uh, what we find is, is that for a person who's hypnotizable, some percentage of them can perhaps sharpen up their recollection of something. But you have to be careful because under hypnosis a person can give you answers, but that doesn't - there's no truth serum sort of effect of hypnosis. Being in hypnosis doesn't mean that someone's gonna tell the truth. If they imagine something or they - they recall it one way, that may skew how they...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...answer it just as much as it would a person who was not under...

((0:16:00))

Q: ...hypnosis, and if anything, perhaps a little bit more, so...

A: Kind of like inventing the story, huh?

Q: That's right. For example, leading questions are - are very troublesome under hypnosis, much more so than without hypnosis. For example, if you ask someone who'd, uh, seen a bank robbery, uh, did the robber have a, uh, revolve-revolver or an automatic type, uh, pistol in his hand? They'd be likely to answer well, it was one or the other. Uh, and even more likely than they would be not under hypnosis, uh, to answer, whereas maybe the real answer was, I didn't see his hand so I don't know.

A: Mm-hm, right.

Q: Where under hypnosis they might be more likely to stay within the way you frame the question, and that's one of the reasons why I want to get all my information about what you've witnessed from you, so that I don't in-inadvertently...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...uh, ask, uh, or at least it cuts down on my tendency to ask leading questions.

So, uh, yeah, in some...

((0:17:00))

Q: ...relatively rare, dramatic cases it could seem to unlock some pieces of information that the person didn't have any previous recollection of, but more likely it allows a person to focus and concentrate their attention on something. And then it's very important for the investigators to check out and see whether whatever additional information they can verify, because, uh, there's, um, a tendency to just answer a question and not apply as much "Well, am I remembering this, or am I just saying this 'cause that's...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...they want an answer?"

A: Right. Okay.

Q: Do you...this guy was apparently asking, some - some entertaining and perhaps amusing...

A: Well, yeah, it just - it looked, uh, it looked too easy, it looked too, uh - I mean people were going up there and just - I mean they were out, and it was like to me, you know, a lot of that, uh...

((0:18:00))

A: ...pessimist about the whole thing.

Q: You were skeptical?

A: Skeptical, you know, was it a - was it set up? I mean well, could - could something like that have been, you know, certain students were told beforehand, "Yeah, you're gonna come up and...

Q: It's possible.

A: ...put on a show"?

Q: It's also possible that that particular individual had real good ability to sort of intuitively guess who was hypnotizable, because one of the - I would tell you about hypnosis is not everybody is hypnotizable.

A: Right.

Q: As a matter of fact, if you were to sort of chart hypnotizability, um, you'd find that some people are not at all hypnotizable. Some people are phenomenally hypnotizable, and most people are somewhere in the mid-range.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Sort of like shoe size and weight and height and everything else.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Do you know what a - do you know what a normal distribution is?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. Hypnotizability appears to be normally distributed, with most people in the middle, and fewer people out towards the extremes of either high or low.

A: Hm.

Q: And so it may be that this, uh, person...

((0:19:00))

Q: ...whether he was a professional or a performer, whatever he was, uh, had gotten real good at reading people's reactions and asking a few sort of preliminary questions, thereby selecting - sort of pre-selecting the sample, on the other hand, it could have all been hooked up.

A: Right.

Q: You know, but yes, there are people who are phenomenally hypnotizable, and, uh, are just open to new experiences and just sort of go along with it. I had a colleague once who I was working as another psychologist and I was working with one of her clients, and, uh, we were trying to see if her client was hypnotizable, and therefore could remember some information that she was not able to. And my colleague went under and the client didn't. That's how we found out she was hypnotizable, is that she just totally went under, and I looked over and there she was, clearly looking like a space cadet, off somewhere in her imagination.

Q1: That was your class.

((0:20:00))

Q: I - I can glance around the room and see how many of these guys, or these

hard-boiled, you know, cops go under. But, um, it - it could have been prearranged, or it could be this guy just had a real good sense of...

A: Right.

Q: ...um...

A: But it - there were some - just a few of them that, uh, he didn't have really do anything.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Um, you know, and like you said he was a - he could have been a real pro and he knew what - what to look for.

Q: Well, if this was entertainment, which is like primarily it sounds...

A: Basically.

Q: ...like it was, um, if he's at all smart about being a good entertainer, he's not gonna call on the folks that don't really look like they're responding as he's going along. So, he's probably doing things that - and asking everybody to do something, and those that don't really respond, he doesn't come back to them. Uh, so...

A: Right.

Q: ...that's - that's what I've observed about some of the entertainers. Uh, I would certainly say to you is that we're not gonna ask you to do - I'm not gonna ask you to do anything that I am aware of that would be all-embarrassing or...

((0:21:00))

Q: ...of entertainment value. That's - that is not any necessary part of hypnosis.

A: Right.

Q: And I think it would be a betrayal of trust that, uh, I'm here as a professional and you're here as a volunteer, and there isn't any underlying goal here to embarrass you or - or in any way, uh, ask you do something silly, so, uh, that's not something I'd be willing to do. I - I genuinely have some pretty strong feelings about using hypnosis for entertainment because it gives it a bad name, makes it sort of glamorous and yet - and yet kind of threatening to people, so - let me tell you a couple of things about hypnosis, just so you, you

know, sort of the framework I'm operating out of. As I've already said, by no means is everybody hypnotizable. Some people think that - and there's some professionals who really believe anyone is hypnotizable, you just have to find the right way. Well, I think that that's incorrect, and I think the research supports that. It appears that some people are very highly hypnotizable. Some people are just...

((0:22:00))

Q: ...virtually not at all, under any circumstances, most people are somewhere in the mid-range. And so a lot of people have had experiences which, if we sat back and looked at them from this point of view would say, "That's probably a person who went into a state of hypnosis." I'll give you a couple of examples that are from ordinary every day experience. Did you ever have the experience of driving home along some familiar route, arriving at home and not remember getting there?

A: I - you know, part of it, like kind of like...

Q: Yeah.

A: ...I was...

Q: You were off doing what? Daydreaming.

A: ...two different points, yeah.

Q: Yeah, you were off daydreaming somewhere. Maybe what you were seeing that - that day that you saw these cars, there was a chunk of time, maybe you really got absorbed in something, whether - whatever it was you were working on or something you were imagining, 'cause you were bored of what you were - or maybe you went and watched a television program and got absorbed in that and lost a chunk of time. Uh, all of those could be essentially being in a state of hypnosis. Uh, another situation that, uh, people, uh, sometimes discover in hypnosis is in weather like we've been having off and on...

((0:23:00))

Q: ...today, when they're driving along in a snowstorm...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...and then at night and their headlights are on, and you know that place where all the snowflakes look like they come from out there?

A: Right.

Q: In the headlights at night? You start watching them, then they get mesmerized by it. They just get all involved in it, and where do they wind up? In the ditch usually, 'cause you can't afford to drive very long in a snowstorm while watching the snowflakes. And, uh, so they're - anything, anytime a person gets a - really extraordinarily absorbed or involved or focused on something, they have a diminished awareness of the other things around them. I think you could probably call that at least a mild state or a light state of hypnosis. Uh, you could call it daydreaming, and so we've got different words that describe it from - from different points of view, but...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...that - that - that is hypnosis. Now in a dramatic form of hypnosis, people sometimes do very extraordinary things. We see that in wartime, we see that in natural catastrophes.

((0:24:00))

Q: Uh, there's a very well-documented case the last time we had some serious tornados here in the Twin Cities. There was a woman who's, um, I think it was a little boy, was trapped underneath a telephone pole that had been knocked down, a utility pole, and she went out and picked the pole up, and the boy was able to be pulled out - his leg was crushed or something like that. Well, two big burly NSP linemen came along a little while later, and they couldn't budge that pole. Did you watch the Summer Olympics last time they were on? You ever - you ever watch the Olympics in 19...

A: Uh, '88?

Q: You ever watch at all? I mean...

A: Uh, yeah, parts of it and...

Q: Particularly the weightlifters, the big, you know, power lifters?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: You ever watch them stand there for a few - few seconds to a minute? You know what they're doing? They're visualizing lifting that weight. They are imagining exceeding their capacity. You'll see it in other athletes too. And that is clearly a state of hypnosis and it's taught as a part of sports training now for all world-class athletes and many below.

((0:25:00))

Q: They're taught how to put themselves in tense, focused, frame of mind where they imagine being able to do something that's either right at or beyond their ordinary abilities, and that will seem to bring out a little bit more. Nowadays any athlete that doesn't do that is probably at a competitive disadvantage, because it does have an effect. On some people it's dramatic, some people it's less so.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Um, so there are a number of situations, like watching a movie or a play, or even reading a book. I sometimes will watch a movie or read a book, and it's - it was so absorbing that at the end of it, I almost feel like that's part of my life experience.

A: Yeah.

Q: So that could be a - a, you know, a mild or a natural form of hypnosis, where you've gotten so absorbed in something that you lose your - your normal sense of boundaries and it feels more like, uh, you were in it.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So hypnosis is not something that is so categorically different from every day experience. You know, it's some...

((0:26:00))

Q: ...other planet or time warp or something dramatic like that. For some people, they never experience it. For some people, they spontaneously have been doing it all their lives, uh, and so it's - it's a phenomenon, it's a real phenomenon. Some people question whether it's real or fake. Well, a person could try to fake the hypnosis, and maybe some of the folks in that demonstration that you saw, they might have been going along with it because they wanted to - to, uh, be good guys. You know, they wanted to be part of the crowd. They'd been selected and they wanted to follow through on their bargain. Uh, other people are so skeptical that even if they might be hypnotizable...you know, scrutiny and careful assessment, that they can't really let go and try it. You know, and that could be equally true of playing tennis or jumping off a diving board, you know. Somebody might be a perfectly good diver, but if they're - if they're too self-conscious about what they look like if they happen to belly flop, well, then...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...you know, so all these normal...

((0:27:00))

Q: ...rules of human behavior apply to this, just like as in other areas. Um, hypnotizability seems to be something that some people have a lot of, some people have none, some people have a medium amount, and you can't hardly change it a whole heck of a lot. It appears that on the average, children are more hypnotizable. They're more imaginative, they get into - absorbed into imaginary games more easily than we mature, grown up adults, 'cause we don't let ourselves do that as easily, and that may be appropriate, but children on the average tend to be a bit more hypnotizable, and as you get older and older, in your 70's and 80's - people - each decade older you get, there appears to be a - a lower general hypnotizability. And that may be because attention span and the ability to concentrate intensely, um, diminishes with age. That sort of fits what we know about the aging process, so that might account for that. Hypnotizability doesn't seem to be correlated with anything else. Uh, we used to think...

((0:28:00))

Q: ...or way - long before I was born, back 50, 70 years ago, 100 years ago, when hypnosis was first being looked at with any sort of scientific interest, um, there were allegations or assertions that hypnotizability was correlated with retardation or being mentally bizarre, and we know very clearly that people of every IQ level, every level of success and productivity or lack of it are hypnotizable, and it's not correlated with IQ. They used to think that only women were hypnotizable, and that's very clearly not the case. Um, this doesn't seem to be correlated with anything except, uh, visual, uh, memory, or visual imagination. People who tend to think in visual imagery rather than symbolic or other kinds of imagery, tend to be more hypnotizable. That's about the only thing that seems to correlate, seems to be sort of its own entity and bearing. In the hypnosis...

((0:29:00))

Q: I think it can be very clearly stated that, um, a person does not give up control. Um, I think it is undoubtedly the case that everybody up on that stage or wherever they were in the demonstration you saw, was there because they were willing to be, and they weren't actually under anyone else's control. Um, if somebody yelled "Fire," and there'd be no reason to believe it was a lie, they'd have been, uh, heading for the door, it'd have been a horse race. Uh, so a person doesn't really get under someone else's control. As - if a person can go into hypnosis and get focused and concentrated, uh, they probably, uh, can

go along with a suggestion more readily, more enthusiastically, more vividly, but, uh, it's because they're willing to, and if the person asked them to do something that was against their values or sort of embarrassing, whatever, they'd probably just stop and say, "Wait, I'm not willing to do that," or, uh, "I don't choose to do this anymore," or...

((0:30:00))

Q: ...you know, they - they...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...they would stop and either walk away offended, or say, "I'm not going to do it," but they - they - they wouldn't just let them do it.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Um, so it's pretty clear that - that hypnotists, uh, to speak, does not get control. They may have an agreement, you know, for a finite period of time, "I'll go along with what you're asking me to do as long as it's acceptable to me, 'cause I'm interested in the experience," or whatever, "I'm willing to help the FBI," or whatever reason. Um, also some people are concerned that they will lose awareness, you know, it's like they're gonna go unconscious. The vast majority of people, uh, have just as good recall of what happened and what they said and what they did, and what they remembered and what they pictured in their minds while they were under hypnosis, uh, as when they're not in hypnosis. Um, very, very few people seem to have sort of a what we call spontaneous amnesia. Without any instructions to do so, they may blank out what they thought about or...

((0:31:00))

Q: ...recalled or whatever, and that's one of the reasons why we make a tape recording of it. Um, primary reason is for the Bureau to have a...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...a complete record, so that if - if anything that came out of this were ever to be presented as evidence in court, a complete record of everything I said to you, and...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...and, uh, it can be argued that if I do a good job, I don't ask you leading questions, and so no - no thoughts were planted in your mind, or you were

somehow instructed to say something. That's the main reason - well, one - one other reason is so that a person, if they do happen to have spontaneous amnesia, can reassure themselves that no, all I talked about was what we came here for, and that leaves the sort of last - sometimes a sensitive point for some people. Some people are worried that perhaps under hypnosis that they'd start blurting out whatever personal information about themselves, and there's absolutely no evidence to suggest that that happens. First of all, we're gonna confine ourselves to the time period of approximately 11:30...

((0:32:00))

Q: ...to 10:00 pm on the 22nd, and only those things having to do with two cars you saw in your yard. But even beyond that, there would be no tendency I'm aware of in ten or 12 years of working, doing a lot of hypnosis work, of anybody just blurting out something that doesn't have anything to do with the reason that hypnosis is being done. So it doesn't have that effect of somehow causing somebody to lose their internal controls at all.

A: Yeah.

Q: So that's sort of my standard spiel.

A: Okay.

Q: Slipped it in there. Does that leave you with any questions or concerns or curiosities? 'Cause I want to be sure that you have, you know, whatever questions you've got I'd answer it at least as well as I can.

A: I - I think so, I feel fine.

Q: Does it sound okay to you?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Reasonable type thing? You know, and the other thing I think I have to say to you is that I can't predict, I can't tell you what hypnosis would feel like if - if you're hypnotizable.

((0:33:00))

Q: The way to do that is we'll try and find out, but, um, ahead of time about the only things I can say to you is that most people experience at least a mild s- sensation of relaxation, because one of the very few things that happens as the result of going into hypnosis is a few of your physiological, uh, indicators drop very slightly. Uh, we tend to find that somewhere between 3% and 7%

drop in heart rate, uh, blood pressure, uh, muscle tension, and a few other physiological indicators like that, that go along with relaxation because if you're focusing, you're concentrating on one thing, and sort of letting go of the other, so your body has a tendency to relax.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: I got them there in the physiological sense, but it's nothing dramatic.

A: Okay.

Q: That's the only other thing that seems to happen.

A: Okay.

Q: And what we would do, uh, the next couple of steps to go through if - if you're comfortable, uh...

((0:34:00))

Q: ...would be, uh, probably the very next thing would be let's try a hypnosis induction - that's a technical term. Um, a hypnosis induction technique and see if it works. If that one doesn't work, we'll talk a little bit about what part of it seemed okay, what part of it just didn't fit you and your personal experiences, and we'll try another one, make one up, or we'll try another standard. Um, and so we can try, you know, as many as we have the patience and the time for. At some point I'd begin to conclude this person probably isn't hypnotizable, but at this point we don't know. Um, the next thing would be to review, uh, a Hypnosis Consent form, which is basically just, uh, a written statement that we use all the time which says that I know a videotape's gonna be made and, uh, Dr. (John Ritz) has explained to me what we're doing and answered any questions I had, and I'm willing to be interviewed for a certain purpose, and we'll fill in the blank here about what I saw from my house, about two cars turning around in the yard on Sunday...

((0:35:00))

Q: ...October 22nd, and, maybe that kind of thing. Um, and then as I say, if you're hypnotizable, then we'll use whichever induction technique seems to work into hypnosis, and then slowly let you play in your mind, either visually or whatever other way your mind works, um, as - as much detail as - as we can about what you saw. And it may not produce one single bit more information than you recall now. Every now and again, some particular factor, observation springs to mind the person didn't otherwise recall. And that would give - if there are such things, it could give these guys some additional, uh,

work to do, as if they didn't have enough. But, um, they're gluttons for punishment, so we'll - we'll keep it on them if we can. Um, please be...

((0:36:00))

Q: ...aware of the fact that you're under no obligation to come up with any more information. In other words, try not to fill in blanks. On the other hand, if you have an impression, you have a vague sense about something, all you have to do is label it as that, you know, like, "I think I'm seeing." Okay. Then we can take that as an impression and it's not, you know, a hard cast or oh, a cast in stone kind of fact. So if you - if you can just sort of - and I'll try to clarify with you whether you see something really - see it clearly or you're guessing at it. Guesses are okay, as long as they're labeled as such. Uh, so don't - don't on the other hand, try so hard not to say anything that you're not 100% sure of that you may leave out...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...things. It's just - try to give them some kind of a description that says how clearly or confident that you are in what you're saying. Let me, um, at this point read out loud...

((0:37:00))

Q: ...what, uh, the Consent form says, and then we'll deal with signing it after we've been through assessing your hypnotizability, find out if it works. But, uh, basically what this says, and I read it out loud so it's on the tape. Actually why don't you - why don't you look at it, and I'll read through on the other copy, that way you'll know that it says what I say that it says. It says Hypnosis Consent form. "I hereby agree voluntarily and freely to undergo hypnosis and be interviewed under hypnosis in order to assist the Federal Bureau of Investigation with an investigation that it is conducting. I understand that a videotape will be made of the entire interview, and that this videotape may be used for any lawful purpose connected with the investigation or any subsequent action based on the investigation. Dr. (John Ritz), a licensed consulting psychologist, has explained the procedures to be used during the course of this hypnosis session, and any questions which I have concerning this procedure have been answered to my satisfaction. The purpose of this interview under hypnosis is to assist my memory in recalling the following." I guess we'll write it in now. Um...

((0:38:00))

Q: ...uh, "Details concerning two automobiles I saw turn around on my property on Sunday, October 2..."

A: My - you should probably put my dad's property...

Q: Oh.

A: ...because I don't own a thing.

Q: "On my father's property on Sunday, October 22, 1989." Okay?

A: Yeah.

Q: We'll come back to that afterwards. Any - any other questions or should we just proceed with - find out if you're hypnotizable?

((0:39:00))

A: Yeah, let's proceed.

Q: Okay. The other thing is if you feel like you'd like to take a break, we could take a break here, or would you like to just go ahead?

A: No, I feel all right.

Q: Okay. I just don't want to wear anybody down. Okay. Indirect subtle torture, that kind of thing. Okay. What I'd like to do then, Dan, for the next, uh, somewhere between five and ten minutes probably, is take you through a standard, one of many, uh, hypnosis induction technique. And, um, what I'm basically gonna do is ask you to focus and concentrate your own - your attention on a couple of ideas that I'm gonna describe to you. If at any point in any of this it either seems, um, un-inappropriate, unpleasant, uh, embarrassing, or in any other way makes you uncomfortable, please just let me know that. There is - you will be able to talk at your will, as well as answer a question that - that I ask you, if you're willing to answer it. Uh, you're retaining your discretion...

((0:40:00))

Q: ...about that.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Uh, you're not coming under my control at all. It's an effort to find a way for you to focus and concentrate your mind, initially on something pleasant, perhaps kind of curious or enjoyable, and then if you're hypnotizable, the next time around, we'd then start off with that, and then direct your attention back

to that Sunday at your dad's house. Um, and, um, we'll just go through this and see how it goes. If some parts of it just don't feel right, you can - you can let me know that at any time and we can stop. Um, if you find you've got a question or two that comes in your mind and you can save it to the end, so that we sort of go through the whole thing, do that, however, if it's something that you're - you're thinking about it's distracting you, just say, "I want to stop and ask you a question," and we'll do that and start all over again, there's no...

A: Okay.

Q: ...surprise value here, okay. You retain as much...

((0:41:00))

Q: ...control over as much as you want to exert. That's what I want to make very clear. Okay?

A: Okay.

Q: Now, let's, um, let's just go through this, uh, idea. I'm gonna ask you to start off by - look up towards your eyebrows, all the way up towards the top of your head. As you hold your eyes up, slowly close your eyelids. Take a deep breath, exhale, let your eyes relax. And I'd like you to concentrate on a welcome, pleasant feeling of floating. I'd like you to imagine, Dan, that your body is getting lighter and lighter, as if you could float right up off the chair, or right down through the chair. I want you to concentrate on this welcome, pleasant feeling of floating. I'm gonna concentrate on your left hand...

((0:42:00))

Q: ...and arm. In a moment, I'm going to stroke the little finger of your left hand, and after I do, you will begin to feel little movement sensations in that finger, and these movements will spread to the rest of the fingers in your hand, causing your hand to feel light and buoyant, and you can let it float upwards. Ready? First one finger and then another. And as these little restless movements develop, your left hand begins to feel light and buoyant, and bending at the elbow, you can let it just float into an upright position. This is an exercise in your imagination, and you can just imagine that your hand is getting lighter and lighter...

((0:43:00))

Q: ...and slowly, at your pace, effortlessly, it just begins to float, as if for example, it was connected to a balloon, a helium-filled balloon, which is tied to the extreme back of the hand. It slowly is tugging, gently, just enough to

make your hand feel lighter and lighter. I'm gonna help it get started. Okay, I'm gonna stop for a second, let me ask you a question - you can open your eyes. How did the idea of your hand floating seem to you? Did that - did that seem comfortable or kind of stretching your imagination or...

A: Uh, it kind of...

((0:44:00))

A: ...seemed like - I was thinking it's not moving.

Q: Okay.

A: It's not going up.

Q: Did you - did you begin to feel a little self-conscious?

A: A little bit. I mean not - I felt like it's not working.

Q: Okay. 'Cause when I - when I started to move your hand, it was even heavier than it is right now. It felt like - like there was some tension in it, and when I - I sensed that, I said woops, let's talk about this for a second. There's absolutely no, uh, fundamental reason why we have to do, uh, anything with floating. As a matter of fact, what I usually do is - is, uh, my next step is to say what about the idea - do you - do you ever, um, for example, if you're gonna take a break from something you're doing and you're gonna relax, do you - do you - you listen to some tapes. Do you ever do any mental imagery? You ever do think about some kind of a scene or a sensation to sort of help you relax?

((0:45:00))

A: Um, uh, let's see, like when I have a headache...

Q: Uh-huh.

A: ...um, just kind of like, uh, well, how would - I remember doing it once, and it really actually kind of worked. Uh...

Q: Oh, yeah.

A: ...just kind of, uh, it's ju- it just, uh, s-sitting there and no - no worries kind of a thing. It's just like - it was like just...

Q: Have you ever - in sit- in sitting there and thinking about no worries, have you

ever felt your body just sort of seem so wooden, so heavy, that it would take an awful lot of effort to make it move?

A: Have I ever felt that way?

Q: Yeah.

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: Sometimes it actually feels heavy.

Q: Okay. Then guess what?

((0:46:00))

Q: We're gonna skip the floating, and we're gonna - we're gonna use heaviness. See, I'm - I'm a real practical fellow. What I'm looking for is some kind of image, some kind of sensation that you can get into. So let's - let's punt the idea of floating and, uh, turn it around and try the heaviness. How would that be?

A: All right.

Q: Okay. Let's try that. Start the same way. You - you ready to go ahead?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay. Start the same way. One, we'll tuck towards your eyebrows and all the way up to the top of your head, two, holding your eyes up, close your eyelids slowly.

A: I can't do that slow.

Q: That's okay. Why don't you just...

A: It's like I...

Q: Instead, let's just - let's just let you close your eyelids. See, I - I don't want to - I don't want this to have parts that are difficult or stressful. That's counterproductive. So, let's just try and let you close your eyes, and - and just sort of...

((0:47:00))

Q: ...hold your head in a comfortable position, just close your eyes. Take a deep breath. Let it out. And I'd like you to imagine that you, for the next several minutes, are in a place where there is nothing that you have to do for the next several minutes. There are no chores, there are no actions, there's nothing for the next few minutes that you have to do. You've got one of those little - little islands in time that you can be on, in which you don't have to do anything, you can just be. And as you are just being on that - in this chunk of time, your body is relaxing. You can begin to feel the tension, the effort, just drain out of your body as if the chair or like...

((0:48:00))

Q: ...a sponge that was just absorbing the tension. And as the tension goes out of your body, it begins to feel heavier, as if there's not so much energy that you would use to lift your arm, move your leg, or wiggle your toes. Your body is just feeling heavier and heavier, and for the next few minutes, it's a welcome, pleasant feeling, as if for the next few minutes, your body is feeling more and more like it's made out of lead. Your arms are heavy. Your wrists are heavy. Even your fingers are heavy. As your - this heaviness increases, for the next few minutes it's a comfortable feeling. Indeed it's a signal to yourself that you're letting go of that effort that it takes...

((0:49:00))

Q: ...to do daily things. And you're just taking advantage of this chunk of time in which there's nothing to do, no actions to be taken, decisions to be made. You can just be - be quiet, be peaceful, be at rest, and you're getting heavier and heavier. And for the next few minutes it's a welcome feeling, because it's a signal to yourself that you're shifting gears. You're just letting the other things take care of themselves for a few minutes, and for the next few minutes, in your mind and your body, you don't need to do a single thing, except just be. Be quiet, and be at rest...

((0:50:00))

Q: ...heavier, and heavier, as though it would take so much effort, that it would be just so much work to lift an arm, so much effort to lift a leg. It just doesn't seem worth it. For right now, you just don't even need to do anything. You'll be quiet, you'll be peaceful, you'll be at rest. And in this state of resting and welcome, pleasant heaviness, in addition to feeling the tension just drain out of your body, you can imagine that in your mind's eye, you've got...

((0:51:00))

Q: ...something maybe the equivalent of a - of a VCR, and in that VCR, you can put a tape, a tape of things that you've seen, things that you've thought about, things that you've done, and for the next few minutes, you can get out the tape from your imaginary library, and you can put the tape marked "Sunday, October 22nd," into that VCR. And there's a TV set that you can see. The nice thing about this VCR and this TV set is that the remote controls work right straight from your mind. You don't need to pick up anything, you don't need to push a button. If you imagine...

((0:52:00))

Q: ...it playing, it goes into play. If you imagine it going into rewind, it goes into rewind. And just like on the sport shows, if you want to zoom in on something, you can zoom in on it, just by thinking about it. That'll change the picture on the TV that's in your mind's eye. And as you sit there and are relaxed and quiet, you can imagine putting the tape in for Sunday, the 22nd of October, 1989, and you can imagine pushing the play button. And as you see an image coming up on the screen...

((0:53:00))

Q: ...you can go fast forward, and images of the day move by, and as you come to the part of the tape that shows you in the upstairs room of the house, looking out the window, and something calls your attention to - to look out the window, you hear a noise or you see a sight, and you turn and look out the window, and you can have the tape now go into regular play, normal speed play. And what you see is a car that comes in the driveway, into your yard. And...

((0:54:00))

Q: ...as you watch the tape, I would like you to either watch it and tell me later what you see, or if it's comfortable for you, maybe you can tell me what you're seeing as you see the tape. If you can describe it for me. You see the car turn in, and if you can, why don't you describe for me what you see.

((0:55:00))

A: Uh, um, I see a...a big car turn around.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And I - I can't remember if - I don't know if (Smokey) barked this time. It seems like I heard the car more than...

((0:56:00))

A: ...and then when it turned around, it was, uh, I saw the front end and then quick, just quickly - quickly turn toward the front, so it's like I saw the - the back and then the front, a real quick u-turn.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And it was a big front end, big front end. The front end of the car was kind of like a face.

Q: Mm-hm. How was it like a face?

((0:57:00))

A: It's got a big - big grill on it, and headlights.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And it's - and it's on its way out.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It was really quick.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: So...

Q: You can, just by imagining, rewind that tape. You can play that tape in your mind again...

((0:58:00))

Q: ...and there was something you said at the very beginning that I didn't fully understand. You said, "I can't remember - " and then I thought you said a (Smokey) part. I didn't understand what you said.

A: I don't know if (Smokey) barked.

Q: Oh, (Smokey) barked?

A: I don't think she did.

Q: Oh, that your dog?

A: Yeah.

Q: Oh.

A: I think I heard the car instead this time.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It was a louder car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And it made - it made the noise, uh, from driving so fast on the gravel, I could hear it.

Q: And the first part of the car you saw was the back?

A: Yeah.

((0:59:00))

A: I saw it come in the yard.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And then it turned around.

Q: And what can you see about the back of the car? Is the car a - is the car a station wagon or a sedan-shaped car?

A: It's a - it's a sedan.

Q: Uh-huh. Can you see the trunk?

A: It's kind of a blur.

Q: Uh-huh. What color is it?

A: It's..

((1:00:00))

A: ...I kind of want to say a yellow. Not a yellow, but a - a dirty yellow.

Q: And is that color the same color all over the car, from what you can see?

A: I don't - I don't think so.

Q: Uh-huh. What other colors do you see? Or what difference in color do you see?

((1:01:00))

A: When it goes up the hill, I think it's a different - it's not - it's not dirty on top.

Q: And what color does it look like it is on top?

A: Part of it's white.

Q: What part of it that's white?

((1:02:00))

A: The part by the back window.

Q: Is that the part that's on the side or the top of the car near the back window?

A: It's on the side and the top.

Q: Okay. Does it look like it's painted or colored a different color than the rest of the car?

A: It looks like it's, uh, uh, it's, uh...

((1:03:00))

A: ...a fancy part of it. Looks fancy - the part, the back window is fancy.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's, uh, got a fancy backend.

Q: And what makes it fancy?

A: The smaller - the smaller back window.

Q: Hm?

A: With the kind of maybe, uh, um, kind of more - more straight down than...

((1:07:00))

A: It just seems like it was - it was in the right place, in the middle.

Q: Okay. Can you see anything about it? What color it is or any writing on the license plate?

A: No. No, I can't see anything.

Q: Okay.

((1:08:00))

Q: What else can you see on the car?

A: It seem likes - it seems like the - I want to say that just taking off - because it was taking off faster, what, uh, the front end was up more than the backend.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's like it was heavy in the backend. Like it had a lot of power.

((1:09:00))

A: I'm trying to see the - the face of it more.

Q: Okay, that's good.

((1:10:00))

Q: What does the face of it look like?

A: Uh, it's just such a big - big front end.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Uh, taking off up the hill. I don't see any - I don't see the cars like that turn around very often. I...

((1:11:00))

A: ...I wonder where that car, where that car came from.

Q: Not a car that you remember seeing around before?

A: No. I - I - I just remembered thinking about that car.

Q: Uh-huh.

A: And then it was gone.

Q: You said the front looked kind of like a face?

A: It reminded me of a face.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And can you see the grill on that car?

((1:12:00))

A: A little bit.

Q: Mm-hm. I'd like you to try to remember the shape, the design that you see, that part of it that you see. I'd like you to try to remember it so that you could draw, as best you can, what that looks like later on. How many headlights does the car have on its face?

A: I, uh, I...

((1:13:00))

A: ...I used to think they were round, one round but I don't - I'm not sure anymore.

Q: Okay.

A: I think they - they're - they were vertical headlights. Like maybe they're - they're one on top of the other on each side. Kind of like from a distance, they look like round headlights. But they're two - two square headlights.

Q: So what you're seeing now is two square headlights on each side...

((1:14:00))

Q: ...one on top of the other? Am I understanding you right?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Okay.

A: It's hard to say for sure.

Q: I understand. Just - you do the best that you can. When you're not sure but you have an idea, you can just tell us what the idea is, you're doing fine. Now can you picture the grill, so that you can see what shape it was, what design's in the grill, anything about it that you can recall?

A: It just seems like a...

((1:15:00))

A: ...kind of a, uh, a tacky grill. Uh, like don't know. Just gives me the feeling of, uh, not - not...

((1:16:00))

Q: Gives you a feeling of what?

A: It, uh, round circles or not - it wasn't like mine.

((1:17:00))

A: A lot of - a lot of circles on it, little circles.

Q: And so you're saying the picture you have in your mind does have circles or does not have circles in the grill?

A: It has circles.

Q: It has circles?

A: Yeah.

Q: Is that the pattern on the grill?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: It's kind of - kind of...kind of vague.

Q: Mm-hm.

((1:18:00))

A: I want to say that it's - I don't like the grill.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It's, uh, it's, uh...it's kind of the front of a real big - big front end, and I don't like that kind of a car.

Q: Mm-hm. As you look at that front end, can you see any writing on it that says anything about the model or the manufacturer, or can you see any kind of a hood ornament on it?

((1:19:00))

A: I see something on the hood, going on each side, toward the headlights, like - oh, I don't know.

((1:20:00))

Q: What are you seeing right now, Dan?

A: Uh...

((1:21:00))

A: ...the - the hood.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And seeing - looking in the window.

Q: Mm-hm. Good for you. What can you see when you look in the window?

A: Somebody making a quick corner.

Q: Mm-hm. Can you see how many people that are inside the car?

A: I don't think so.

((1:22:00))

Q: Can you see anyone driving the car?

((1:23:00))

A: Uh...I can only guess.

Q: Okay. What would you guess?

A: I just - he was alone, he's driving fast. He's lost. He must be wasting time.

((1:24:00))

A: He came down here and - he found out it was a dead end, and he wants to get out of here. He was alone.

Q: And that's your guess, right?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: Okay. Looking again at the front of the car, the hood and the grill, can you see any writing...

((1:25:00))

Q: ...on the front of the car, where it might say the name of the car, or the manufacturer of the car or anything like that?

A: Uh...it has, uh, the...

((1:26:00))

A: ...hood is higher than the - the - the size of the front end. The hood is higher than the sides.

Q: Okay.

A: It looks - it reminds me of the - the car that was, uh, in a movie.

Q: Hm, what movie was it in?

A: It was a movie I watched a long time ago.

((1:27:00))

A: And the car in that movie was like a - had a face, and the car was the devil. No one was in the devil's car. Yeah. It wasn't a cartoon, it was a movie.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And that - that car reminded me of the devil's car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And the devil car in the movie looked like a face in the front when it was after the - whatever it was after.

Q: Uh-huh.

((1:28:00))

A: But it - I don't think it was the same car though. I mean it wasn't the same model.

Q: It reminded you of it?

A: Yeah. In fact, I think I even thought of that when I was there that day, how it looked like a big, big car, in a hurry after something.

Q: Mm-hm.

((1:29:00))

Q: Then after the car turned around and you saw the front, you saw the headlights and the grill, it went off up a hill?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And what part of it could you see as it was going up the hill?

A: I wanted to make sure I knew where it was going. Sometimes the car stops in front of the house, and you think it left, but it didn't.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It drove fast...

((1:30:00))

A: ...and I ran out of my room, into the other side of the house room. And it was real dusty, the road was dusty, and it drove real fast up the hill. I could - I could see the side of the car, and the backend of the car.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: That's when I thought about the short trunk and the fancy back, and...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It didn't slow up...

((1:31:00))

A: ...at all. It drove fast all the way up and around the hill.

Q: Could you see any part of the backend to tell what shape its taillights were? Or what its license plate - its license plate was?

A: It seemed like the license plate was - it was a fancy backend.

Q: Can you say that again?

A: It was a fancy backend.

Q: Fancy backend? Could you see any part of the license plate?

((1:32:00))

A: No, it was dusty.

Q: Oh?

A: I - I think the taillights were square.

Q: Then does it go out of sight?

((1:33:00))

A: Uh-huh. It goes fast all the way.

Q: Mm-hm. Now, I'd like you to have the tape go fast forward again, and you can see the images of the day going by, until it gets to the nighttime.

((1:34:00))

Q: And after it's dark, once again you see a car or hear a car, somehow a car comes to your attention, is coming into the yard, and you can have the tape go into normal regular speed play, and I'd like you to watch what you see in your

mind's eye on the tape about the second car that comes in, sometime around 9 o'clock or later in the evening. And as you watch the tape, I'd like you to tell me what you see please.

A: Uh, I'm still thinking about the afternoon.

Q: That's okay. You can do that.

((1:35:00))

Q: You don't have to leave.

A: I, uh, uh, (Penny), my sister-in-law came over.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I was trying to figure out what I was gonna do. I - I wanted to get a lot done.

((1:36:00))

A: She was by the horses. I was by the barn door, and she said, "What are you doing?" I said, "I'm trying to figure out what I'm going to do with the rest of the day." I...

((1:37:00))

A: ...I was trying to decide if I should - I always take a long time to decide. Should I go to church now, in the afternoon, or tonight at Newman Center? It's - I could - I could - I could run now.

((1:38:00))

A: I wanted to run when it was light out. So - so I thought I better hurry up. I got - I got ready to run at home. Then (Penny)'s friends came, and I went running. I ran toward the Delwin Ballroom.

((1:39:00))

A: And I ran down our field on our land, and then I ran across the field to the - to the south. I had my headphones on. It was nice out. I ran way down into the meadow. It was hot. I didn't - I didn't need to wear my sweater. So I ran back.

((1:40:00))

A: And left my sweater in my car. Then I ran toward the Delwin Ballroom again,

through the cornfield, across the parking lot. And I remember thinking about the family I give band lessons to.

((1:41:00))

A: They were at the - they were at the dance, the Polka Festival. There were a lot of cars there. And I thought down there later, that somebody from the Polka Festival turned around in our yard. They wanted to see what was around there. Or they thought they could get to the Delwin Ballroom by going that way.

((1:42:00))

A: Then I ran. I ran through the Tom Thumb parking lot. And then I decided to run up our 91st Avenue, and I ran all the way up. I can remember not running the hill...

((1:43:00))

A: ...very well. There were lots of activity on the road. I think I got the mail from our mailbox, waved to a lady who was walking, and ran and pretended the paper was like a football in my hand. I got home.

((1:44:00))

A: And I talked to Mr. (Phil Rogaceski) there, (Penny)'s friend. I wanted to keep running, so I ran around the chicken barn, and kept running around the chicken barn. And then I scared the horses when they came around. Mr. (Rogaceski) left before I was done running. The horses went down (unintelligible). (Smokey) went along with, because (Penny) wasn't gonna...

((1:45:00))

A: ...go up by the road. She was staying away from the road so (Smokey) could go with, otherwise (Smokey) might get hit by a car. I'm wasting time, right?

Q: No, you're not wasting time. It sounds like you're recalling things that you see clearly in your mind, is that right?

A: Uh-huh.

Q: That's good, that's exactly what we're trying to do together. Now, can we - is there anything else about that car in the afternoon?

((1:46:00))

Q: I can see how you were thinking about it when you got up to, uh, where the Polka Festival was.

A: Uh-huh.

Q: You were still thinking about it and trying to make sense out of it. Is there anything else about the car that you thought about in the afternoon?

A: It was, uh...it was, uh, just weird.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: How the car - how a big car like that would turn around so fast and drive so fast up the hill.

((1:47:00))

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Doesn't...

Q: What age would you say that car was? What kind of - how - what year would you guess that car is?

A: Uh, at the - at the time I thought it was a fancy car, a big fancy car, one of those - one of those big fancy cars. I know I told them it was a - that I thought it might be a - like a 1973, but...

((1:48:00))

A: ...I don't think that's - maybe I'm just trying to fill in the - a different picture of something.

Q: Mm-hm. Did you have a guess as to what year you think that car is? What you're seeing in your mind now?

A: The backend seems like a new - newer car. But that - the front end reminds me of a - kind of like a - a gas guzzler.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Not econ- uh, not - not like a new smart...

((1:49:00))

A: ...like new cars that are more smart looking. It looked like just a - a big, big honker. But, uh, there's some new ones like that too.

Q: Okay. Now, can you move forward in time on that tape, to the evening now? Think you can shift your - your attention now to the evening?

A: Uh, I'm thinking.

Q: Can you?

((1:50:00))

A: I got to church. I took a shower at the club. I got out of there, I drove fast. I was late for church, it was filled up. I stood in the hallway for the whole mass.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: It said, "Do not stand in the hallway. Do not stand in the corridor," but I did, other people did. No one said anything.

((1:51:00))

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I looked at the pictures in the hallway, and couldn't believe how much - how much they wanted for them, how expensive they were. Then I went to eat. I ran - I was the first one out of there. I didn't waste any time. I went and ate. I sat alone. I set a goal to be home by 6 o'clock, and I was.

((1:52:00))

Q: Mm-hm.

A: That doesn't happen very often, that I get home on time. Tomorrow we have school, band starts, I got to start the beginning band. I was typing cards for all my records. A lot of busy shuffling, busy work.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Time - I lost track of time.

Q: Mm-hm.

((1:53:00))

A: And I - I don't even think I had the radio on. I was so - mom and dad were gone. I was into myself, just trying to really - I enjoy getting everything perfect, at least to - so that I think it's perfect, so that I feel good about it. And I remember thinking...

((1:54:00))

A: ...I - I don't even have the radio on. That's weird. (Tom) wanted me to go to his place for a jam session. It was supposed to be really a good one. I shouldn't miss it, but I wanted to get this stuff done. So I just went to work. Kind of in a...

((1:55:00))

A: ...a - a time warp.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Where I just knew I have to be at school at 7:30 or so. And this is all my time, I can do anything I want. I got finished and I started doing other things...

((1:56:00))

A: ...rearranging boxes, making sure I had everything ready for tomorrow. And then - kept finding other things to do. I don't think I had any interruptions. I can't remember any phone calls or anything, except for when (Smokey) barked. And I - it was...

((1:57:00))

A: ...dark outside.

Q: Let's stop for one second. Just hold your tape for one second while we change the videotape in the camera. Then we'll go right on again.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

INTERVIEW WITH DAVID JOHN LAUER

Q=Mr. (Steven Booth)
Q1=(Eric)
A=David John Lauer

Q1: (Steven Booth).

Q: Hi, how are you doing?

Q1: David Lauer here.

Q: Hi, David. My name's (Steven Booth) from the (unintelligible) Bureau. Thanks for coming down.

A: Uh-huh.

Q1: You want to just have a chair there?

A: Sure.

Q1: (Dave), why don't you take off your coat too so you're more comfortable.

A: Cold up in here. (Unintelligible) this year.

Q: How did (Dave) get down here, did you drive him?

Q1: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

Q1: He's got a meeting again at 4:30 at the store, so...

Q: We won't be that long.

Q1: ...he'll be gone for that.

Q: Say, (Dave), the reason we called you down is we're double-checking with everyone with reference to the investigation into Jacob.

A: Oh.

Q: Okay. And I want you to understand, you know, you're here on your own free will.

A: Yeah.

Q: Do you understand that?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay.

((0:01:00))

Q: And you can leave at any time you want. You understand that?

A: Yeah, I understand.

Q: If you want to leave, you can leave. You're not under arrest just because you're here.

A: Oh, no.

Q: Part of our problem is, (Dave), we wanted to talk to you in a different setting, where we can, you know, have some peace and quiet and not other people coming and going. And that's why you're in this room.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay. You have any questions for us?

A: Uh, I don't have any.

Q: Are you comfortable about coming down here?

A: That's when I took a test that first time. I had my mom come down with me, 'cause I - she didn't feel I felt, you know, really good about going. I was gonna go with, uh, two, uh, FBI agents by myself, and my mom decided to come with me while she...

Q: Okay.

A: ...said, you know, "Oh, I don't want him going alone 'cause he doesn't feel - it's like he doesn't feel very - " I didn't feel very comfortable alone.

Q: But you're comfortable coming down with (Eric)?

A: Yeah.

Q: The only reason he brought you down is so you'd find the place, right.

A: Mm-hm.

((0:02:00))

Q: You have your own car, don't you?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. What's your first name, David?

A: David, yeah.

Q: And your middle name?

A: John.

Q: And the last name is spelled?

A: L-A-U-E-R.

Q: U-E-R?

A: Yeah.

Q: And your date of birth, (Dave)?

A: October 7, 1962.

Q: Okay. What's your address now?

A: 30197 91st Avenue.

Q: 30197?

A: 97, yeah.

Q: That's all one then?

A: That's all one number.

Q: 91st Avenue?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Uh, St. Joseph?

A: Yeah.

Q: And how about a phone number there?

A: 363-7553.

Q: Okay. And who do you live with there, (Dave)?

A: I live with my folks, yeah.

Q: And their first names are?

A: (Anna May) and (Arnie) Lauer.

Q: (Anna May) and (Arnie)?

A: (Arnie), yeah.

Q: How old are you?

A: I'm 27.

Q: Okay. Where are you employed now, (Dave)?

((0:03:00))

A: Coborn's on 5th.

Q: On what?

A: Coborn's on 5th Avenue.

Q: That's a grocery store, right?

A: Mm-hm.

Q1: Coborn's?

A: Coborn's. C-O-B-O-R-N-S.

Q: Okay.

A: Yeah.

Q: That's right on 33rd, right?

A: No, 5th Avenue, close to where (unintelligible).

Q1: We've got a bunch of them.

Q: Okay. That's...

Q1: More than one then, right?

A: Right there.

Q1: Okay.

Q: You're just at the one on 5th Avenue, so - bear with me, I have a little bit of a hearing problem.

A: Oh.

Q: Okay, (Dave)?

A: Okay.

Q: I think I have a cold. (Dave), you know, originally you talked to us - and right after the incident. This way I can take notes if you'll bear with me, so we can - we're double-checking with everyone, you know, we're re-interviewing everyone who's been interviewed. And I guess there's a few things that - how long have you been employed at this store?

A: Nine years now.

Q: Nine years?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. Are you working full, part-time or what?

A: Part-time now. I'm looking for a full time job at, uh, there's a Sausage Kitchen just across the street from where I work, and they're hiring - looking for full time help, so I'm...

((0:04:00))

A: ...I might get the job, but I...

Q: Where'd you graduate from high school, around here or...

A: I graduated from St. Cloud Apollo.

Q: St. Cloud Apollo?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. What year did you get out?

A: '81.

Q: '81?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Now and, uh, what are you driving for a car?

A: A Dodge Aries.

Q: Dodge Aries?

A: 1984, yeah.

Q: 1984?

A: '84.

Q: What color is that?

A: It's dark gray.

Q: Two-door, four-door?

A: Four-door.

Q: Is that in your name? Do you own it?

A: Yeah, it's in my name.

Q: Okay.

A: I was gonna get a two-door, but...

Q: A little sportier, huh?

A: Yeah, something a little bit sportier.

Q: You've lived at home most of your life then, I take it?

A: Yeah.

Q: With your parents?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: How far do you live from where these boys were taken?

A: Oh, jeez, let's see. See, that street I live on now, that's a mile. Yeah, I know my mathematics.

Q: Did you...

((0:05:00))

Q: ...on the day that - you know the day they disappeared? I think (unintelligible).

A: I remember the day, yeah.

Q: Do you remember that date?

A: October 22nd.

Q: Okay. Do you know approximately what time they were taken?

A: I don't know exactly what time.

Q: Okay. What I'm trying to get at is we're trying to see if you may have any information for us or seen anything. I think (Eric) told me before that - where were you about that time?

A: I was down in the basement, watching television, before I heard a phone call saying about an abduction in St. (Jo), on 91st Avenue. I overheard a conversation on - well, see, we got two phones in our house, and I overheard on one line, talking.

Q: Well, who was - who was talking then, (Dave)?

A: Um, (Mike Vanderhut), a resident from St. (Jo), was warning me and my - the rest of the family that there's a, uh, man, gunman running around.

Q: Okay. What was this guy's name, (Mike)?

A: (Mike Vanderhut).

Q1: It was a female, wasn't it?

((0:06:00))

A: Yeah, it was a female on the phone.

Q1: Is that her name, (Miquel)?

A: (Miquel), yeah.

Q: (Miquel Vanderhut)?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: You know about this, right, (Eric)?

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Who was she talking to, (Dave)?

A: Talking to my, uh, my dad.

Q: Oh, did you happen to overhear?

A: Yeah, I overheard. I - then right away I hung up 'cause I didn't know what it was about, I thought maybe it was...

Q: How did you get to pick up the phone, (Dave)? Just think it was for you, or do you kind of do this once in awhile?

A: I just thought it was, you know, for me.

Q: Okay.

A: And...

Q: Well, I kind of listen in on people once in awhile, (unintelligible).

A: Yeah.

Q: Maybe you do that, I don't know, you know.

A: Yeah.

Q: How - when did this phone call come in, do you think?

A: It was about 10:30, quarter - quarter to 11:00.

Q: Were your parents still up that late?

A: Yeah, they were still up.

Q: What are they - what are they - well...

A: You mean the - oh, when the call...

Q: Yeah, when the phone call come in, (Dave).

A: Oh, they were in bed.

Q: They were in bed?

A: My dad had got up, yeah.

Q: How does this, uh, (Miquel)...

((0:07:00))

Q: ...or whatever her name is, know your parents?

A: Oh, they're very good friends.

Q: How old is she? Is she an adult woman or a younger girl?

A: Oh, she's about in her 40's. She's barely - middle-aged adult.

Q: How did she get that information so soon, do you know?

A: Uh, let's see. She heard over a scanner, one of those police scanners.

Q: Okay. So she's talking to your parents then, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Do you know her?

A: Yeah, I know her very well from, uh, she's got a son that's my age, and...

Q: Okay.

A: ...we were good friends in grade school and high school. And, uh...

Q: How much of the conversation did you hear?

A: Just something - the part that there's a man wandering around in the neighborhood with a mask and carrying a gun, and abducted a boy. That's about as far as...

Q: Well, what'd you think about that?

A: I was scared.

Q: Why, what did you think he would do?

A: I thought maybe come to the house and...

((0:08:00))

A: ...you know, shoot holes in some windows or break in...

Q: What were you doing when that - when that phone call came in then? You were still up?

A: I was - yeah, I was up, I was brushing my teeth. I was getting ready for bed.

Q: Still dressed?

A: I was wearing pajamas.

Q: Okay.

A: Yeah. And, uh...

Q: Had you been home all night that night then, (Dave)?

A: The whole night, yeah.

Q: Didn't you have to work at the store?

A: Nuh-uh. No, they never call me up on Sundays.

Q: Okay. The store's open?

A: Oh, they're open, but they never call me up.

Q: Okay. You - you got better hours than Sunday then?

A: Yeah.

Q: So, (Dave), uh, what did you do that day?

A: That day - before the abduction, I was just watching a movie on television.

Q: What was the weather like, do you remember?

A: I remember it was very warm. It felt like 40 or 50 degrees outside, it was just beautiful. I could go outside without a jacket on. I was washing the car and - and, um...

Q: What do you do about sunset? Where were you at?

A: Sunset?

((0:09:00))

Q: You know, in the daytime I'm sure you were - you said it was a beautiful day, and you were...

A: Yes.

Q: ...walking around. Do you recall going to any specific places?

A: No, just sticking around at home.

Q: Okay. Do you hunt or anything?

A: No, huh-uh.

Q: What are your hobbies, (Dave)?

A: I go fishing and I like, uh, artwork. I like to draw. You know, I have a big pad of paper, something to draw...

Q: Do you go out and around in the - in the country to do it at all, or...

A: Oh, sure. Paint scenery and...

Q: What kind of things do you like to paint?

A: Oh, I like, you know, like, uh, landscaping, woods, and farms, farm buildings and, uh, trees.

Q: Did you - did you get around to any places on that Sunday to do this?

A: No, I just stuck around at home. I was doing all this stuff.

Q: Okay. Did anything else unusual - I think you had told (Eric) you had some other - you saw something that night?

A: Yeah, I - well, I seen someone walking around in the backyard. I didn't see the flashlight or...

((0:10:00))

Q: How - how did you see? Can you tell me a little more about - you have a - you live in the basement bedroom then, or what?

A: Yeah, my bedroom's in the basement.

Q: Is there a patio door where you can go out or see something like that?

A: Yeah, there is a patio door.

Q: From the basement?

A: From the basement, (unintelligible).

Q: So you can - you could see then, right?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Is that near your bedroom?

A: That's, uh, where I saw this was like 12 feet away.

Q: And when was it - what were you doing when you saw this figure or shape?

A: I - I got scared and I, you know...

Q: What were you doing, I guess, (Dave)?

A: I was, um, after I brushed my teeth and stuff, that's when I saw the figure in the window, and then I - I was gonna go upstairs, get a drink of water and I thought, I don't...

Q: Was this before the phone call then that your mother got?

A: This is right after I heard about it.

Q: Oh, so right a- right after then?

A: After the phone call, mm-hm. Then I saw the figure.

Q: Okay.

((0:11:00))

Q: You're pretty sure it was there, or you think maybe you were just a little nervous and might have, you know, you're obviously gonna get a little jumpy...

A: Well...

Q: ...about things, hear about something - yeah?

A: No. That's what my mom thinks.

Q: Okay. But you think you saw something then?

A: I think I saw something, yeah.

Q: These boys, did you - you know, Jacob and, uh, I believe it was and...

A: Oh, yeah.

Q: ... have you ever seen these boys make that route before?

A: I've just seen them once.

Q: Okay. When did...

A: Going by.

Q: When did you see them? Did you see them on this night?

A: I'd just seen them like a week - a week before.

Q: What were they doing when you saw them before?

A: They were riding their bicycles with . and biking down to Tom Thumb.

Q: Oh, and you - did you know ?

A: I don't remember .

Q: Okay. You said but with so I guess I was wondering if - did you know the - the boys before this abduction? Have you even - knew who they were?

A: The boys? I...

((0:12:00))

Q: So you say you - (Dave)...

A: ...(unintelligible).

Q: ...you say you saw them the week before biking to the Tom Thumb...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...and that's what I'm curious about. How do you know it was and - and Jacob and the week before? It's okay, I mean what - I mean...

A: Um...

Q: ...yeah, you should know your neighbors, just...

A: Uh, I - uh, brown hair, one's - they're both - the boys are brown-haired.

Q1: Yeah.

Q: But you know them from seeing them in the neighborhood, don't you?

A: I've just seen them once at that time.

Q: Haven't you ever talked to these boys then?

A: No.

Q: Never?

A: Never talked to them.

Q: Did you know...

A: Ever.

Q: ...even who they were before this case?

A: I just, you know, heard some other neighbors talk about there's a family lives down in the cul-de-sac named Wetterling, and they got a couple boys, one's and the other one's Jacob.

Q: Okay. When did you hear about this, before the kidnapping?

A: Yeah.

Q: What would they say about the boys?

((0:13:00))

Q: What did the neighbors say?

A: They'd say, uh, they're very friendly. Very friendly boys and they don't do any harm at all. They don't - they don't do any - any kind of harm at all.

Q: To who, to you?

A: No - yeah, to me, they don't do anything. No harm...

Q: They ever kid you or anything?

A: No, they never did that.

Q: Have you ever gone by them in your car or anything, and they say "Nice car" or anything?

A: No. I never drove by them at all.

Q: Do you - have you ever even been down in that area, by their cul-de-sac?

A: I've gone to walk. I - I go on down.

Q: So (unintelligible)?

A: I walk down there once in awhile, walk through the neighborhood, see how everything's doing.

Q: Yeah. How often do you go on walks, (Dave)?

A: I - it's been awhile since I've gone on a walk.

Q: Why, after this you don't walk much now?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. But before that, would you ever see the boys out in their yard when you were walking?

A: I seen them, just like on the street.

Q: Okay.

A: Biking down there.

((0:14:00))

Q: You're pretty sure - do they go to that Tom Thumb quite a bit then?

A: Only a few times. That one time and then that - that night, I heard about them going to, uh, that night Jacob was taken.

Q: Yeah, okay. What - what time did you see them the other time when they were biking up there? What time of day?

A: It was like around 8:30.

Q: Was it dark?

A: 8:30 - yeah, it was dark.

Q: You think they were supposed to be doing that or not?

A: No, I don't think they should have been doing that.

Q: Who was with them then, that time before?

A: They were, uh, riding down - that guy.

Q: How do you know that it was their friend , I mean?

A: They're very good friends.

Q: Okay. But see, I wouldn't recognize , would you? We're hoping you may know something, you know, talk a little bit and give us a little better insight because, you know, you seem to know them a little bit here.

A: Yeah.

Q: You know, could you recognize if you saw him right today?

((0:15:00))

A: I could say he's got light brownish hair.

Q: Okay.

A: And, uh...

Q: Well, then you've met him before then, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Where did you meet him at then (Dave)?

A: I'd just meet him down the road from my house.

Q: What would you say?

A: Just - just say hello.

Q: Yeah?

A: Yeah.

Q: What would - what would they be doing when you'd seen him then?

A: Oh, they - they'd say, you know, uh, what my name is, ask what my name is.

Q: Oh, were you just walking then?

A: Yeah.

Q: Oh, you weren't in your car, huh?

A: No.

Q: Did you tell them your name?

A: I'd tell them my name, yeah.

Q: Then what'd they do?

A: Nothing, just did whatever they were doing.

Q: What do you think they were doing?

A: Oh, they were just biking down to, uh, see another friend, go to another friend's house or going to, uh, a convenience store.

Q: Okay.

A: Where those three boys were getting that video - movie video for...

Q: Okay.

((0:16:00))

A: ...(unintelligible).

Q: But you saw these boys before they were accosted by that guy, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. How many times do you think you bumped into before October 22nd? You know, where you'd see them on the street?

A: About - I'd say once.

Q: Once? Okay.

A: Just once in awhile.

Q: Do you drive around quite a bit? Has that car of yours got a few miles on it now or not?

A: It's got about, oh, about 40 - um, I'd say it's, uh, I think (unintelligible) probably 40 - 48.

Q: How many years have you owned that?

A: I - let's see, I got that in '86.

Q: And you ever have to - anything wear out on it, (unintelligible)?

A: I had, uh, (unintelligible) wear out and, uh, tires had to be changed - I had to buy tires on it.

Q: Oh. What'd you get? You got good tires on there, new ones?

A: Yeah, they're great, the ones now.

((0:17:00))

Q: Where'd you get them from then?

A: I got those - I got a couple from Stevie's Garage in St. (Jo). It's on West Main Street.

Q: Yeah.

A: And - and I got a couple ones from, uh, the Sears Auto (unintelligible).

Q: When did you get the Sears ones, recently or what?

A: This was just a year ago.

Q: Okay. They working out okay?

A: Yeah, they're really working out great.

Q: Well, we really need some help from you, reference these boys' activities. We want to establish how many times they walked up and down that street. Weren't you interested in that, (Eric)?

Q1: Did you see them biking a lot together?

A: Yeah, I've seen them...

Q1: You ever see them biking separately at all? You ever see Jacob riding a bike by myself or

A: Huh-uh, no.

Q1: Never, huh?

A: 'Cause they're very best, you know, they're very best friends.

Q1: Always riding bikes together though, huh?

A: Yeah.

Q1: And they're not usually riding late at night? Or you see them...

A: No.

Q1: ...riding a lot most in the daytime, huh?

A: I see, um, and, uh, riding together...

((0:18:00))

A: ...during the day. 'Cause I don't think they want to go out at night 'cause...

Q1: And you said you saw them that one night at 8:30?

A: Yeah.

Q1: What were they doing?

A: Uh, they were just biking by.

Q1: How'd you run into them? What were you doing?

A: I was out for a walk.

Q1: Were you?

A: Yeah.

Q1: Was it just those on - those kids on the bike? Were any other kids out at all?

A: It was just and Jacob.

Q1: Do you know most of the other neighborhood kids too?

A: Yeah, I know, uh, (Sunquists).

Q1: Yeah?

A: They got a girl that delivers papers to our house.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: She's very friendly.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: Yeah, very friendly neighbors in St. (Jo).

Q1: Really?

A: Yeah.

Q1: How old is she?

A: Oh, she goes to grade school yet. Um, I never asked her.

Q1: I mean she's still...

A: Yeah, she's grade school.

Q1: Grade school?

A: Yeah.

Q1: So you've never had any problems with...

A: No, I...

Q1: ...Jacob, or any of those kids?

A: Mm-mm, no.

Q: Think they ever gave anyone else any problems? Kidded anyone or threw eggs at houses or anything?

A: Nah.

((0:19:00))

Q: When they'd talk to you, how - how would they - what would they be talking about, (Dave)? Were they pleasant or smart alecks to other people, or were they - what would they talk to you about on your walks?

A: Oh, they'd ask me, you know, where I lived and, uh, where I worked. If I have a job.

Q: Did you tell them these things?

A: I just told them my name and where I lived, and, um, asked how they are, you know.

Q: So what'd they tell you for answers, (Dave)?

A: Um, they'd just tell me, um, they just asked about the weather and stuff, you know. "Oh, it's nice out," you know, and "Me and the buddies and I, we're going out, playing ball and, you know, kickball and stuff like that, and soccer."

Q: How far down would you walk when you'd walk and see them?

((0:20:00))

A: I walked about two and a half miles.

Q: Down towards their house?

A: Yeah.

Q: Did you ever take that old trail that goes straight on to your left, as you come off 91st or whatever it is?

A: Oh, I've done it once, just to see what's down there, you know, if there's a house down below.

Q: Yeah?

A: And there's a house down there. I just turned around and come back. It's a hilly road.

Q: What's that like? Is he a fairly nice guy then when he talks to you?

A: Sure, very nice.

Q: About how many times do you think you talked to totally on the last, say a year?

A: Only maybe twice.

Q: Where - where - where were those two times then, (Dave)? Would they have been on the street or...

A: Yeah, they've been on the street.

Q: Have they ever come over to your house to see your place?

A: No, they never...

Q: Ever invite you to play ball with them or anything?

A: Mm-mm. I just watched them play, you know, with the other neighbors.

Q: Oh, where do they play at, with who?

((0:21:00))

A: Uh, some neighbors that live just a couple houses from Wetterlings. Uh, their names are - I don't know, there's a bunch called (Freelers). They have two kids, one girl and a boy. And there's some other ones too.

Q: Well, where'd they play this ball at then, (Dave)?

A: They'd play - they'd play around there close to the Wetterlings, yeah, over there.

Q: And you happened to be down there watching them, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: You see any strangers around or anything? Notice...

A: No strangers, no.

Q: No one that didn't belong in the neighborhood?

A: Mm-mm.

Q: No kids their age playing?

A: Yeah, they all play together.

Q: Yeah? They any good at it, yeah?

A: Oh, yeah.

Q: How about Jacob? Was he a good player or what?

A: Oh, he's very athletic. 'Cause I heard he was in, uh...

Q: No, not - I guess - (Dave), let's - let's not talk about what we hear about in the paper, okay.

A: Oh.

Q: But, you know, when I ask you something, just what you know from - from your own seeing it or something, or talking to the boys.

A: Oh, 'cause, uh, I seen him, uh, uh...

((0:22:00))

A: ...he's into hockey, youth hockey, and he's very...

Q: Have you seen those games?

A: Oh, yeah, I've gone to those youth hockey games in St. (Jo).

Q: Where do they have them at, right in St. (Jo)?

A: It's at Kennedy School.

Q: Uh, outdoor or indoor?

A: It's indoor.

Q: Do you go to...

A: Oh, they got a outdoor rink too.

Q: Do you go to watch anybody or...

A: I go to the...

Q: ...did you...

A: ...outdoor and go inside.

Q: I mean are there some kids there that you usually know? Do you go there to watch any specific kids in your neighborhood play?

A: I watch just a few kids, yeah.

Q: Is Jacob one of the better players then?

A: I think he's one of the better players, yeah.

Q: Is he a pretty neat kid then, huh?

A: Oh, yeah. Very sharp, intelligent.

Q: Yeah? Pleasant to everyone?

A: Yeah, very pleasant.

Q: How about , how would you rate him compared to Jacob, as far as playing ability and such?

A: Oh, they get along very well.

Q: No, I mean but is - is he as good a hockey player or doesn't he play?

((0:23:00))

A: I don't think - think they play hockey. I just know they play other games together.

Q: Okay. Jacob plays hockey?

A: Yeah.

Q: 'Cause you've seen him?

A: He's got his, uh, hockey team and soccer.

Q: How - how do you know he's soccer? You remember seeing him at a soccer game?

A: Yeah, at, uh, that school he goes to, North Community.

Q: Was he a good...

A: They got a big field out there.

Q: Oh, you watched the - the games there?

A: Sure.

Q: He's pretty good?

A: Yeah. He's very good at, uh, sports, like soccer and ice hockey.

Q: How about - how about ? Does he play any sports at all?

A: No, I don't think he plays any sports.

Q: You haven't seen him in hockey or soccer or anything, huh?

A: Mm-mm. No.

Q1: Do you have any of those other neighborhood kids that you, uh, you've seen play hockey or soccer at all?

A: No, just them boys, just - just Jacob.

Q1: He's the only one, huh?

A: Yeah.

Q1: That you would know at the games, huh?

A: Mm-hm.

Q1: Okay.

A: Yeah.

((0:24:00))

Q: What do you - what do you know about Jerry, his dad? What kind of guy is he?

A: Well, I've never been to his chiropractor place, but I hear he's - someone - a neighbor that lives not too far from him tells me that he's very, very good chiropractor. He has his own office near his home there and, uh...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: ...one time I had a bad back from work, I pulled a muscle in my back, and, uh, this neighbor that lives next to Wetterlings named (Jerva), came over and he told - you know, gave me a little advice, said, "You know, I know a chiropractor that lives not too far from where I live. You can go there and see him."

Q: Did you see him at his home or his office or what?

A: No, I never went there, I just...

Q: Did you know where Jacob lived exactly?

A: Exactly? No. I'd just see boys walk up the road.

Q: Okay. But when they were playing - I mean don't let me confuse you, (Dave), but when they were playing...

((0:25:00))

Q: ...down there near the - his house, you know, you said you watched them play...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...baseball I think, did you know which house was his?

A: No, 'cause there were so many down there, you know, like there was a white house...

Q: Okay. But you knew Jacob then?

A: Yeah.

Q: How long you think you've known Jacob for? I mean when do you think first that you could have saw him and said well, that's Jacob Wetterling?

A: Yeah.

Q: For how many years?

A: I would say roughly two years now.

Q: Okay. Do you think he was one of the neater kids that you know?

A: I think so.

Q: Okay. Not just because he's been taken, but you thought that before he was taken? That he's a pretty neat kid?

A: I mean I think he's a really neat kid.

Q: Okay.

A: Yeah.

Q: What'd he have going for him, more than say other kids that you'd watch playing sports?

A: What about...

Q: What about Jacob, (Dave), that you - I mean he was a neat - neater kid you thought, than most of the other ones, right?

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Why? Just what was neater about him?

((0:26:00))

A: You know, he's very quick, you know, and he's very - what the - what's the phrase, agile people use or...

Q: Mm-hm.

A: Yeah, and very competitive and very outgoing, and...

Q: Why, uh, (Dave), why do you think someone would take this boy, Jacob? What do you think happened?

A: Oh, my gosh. I've heard - I've heard different...

Q: Not what - not what you hear.

A: Oh.

Q: What do you personally think happened? What do you think, uh, first off, do you have any - who do you think took him?

A: I have no idea.

Q: What do you think the guy who took Jacob was thinking? What do you think goes on in his mind before - what would cause a man to do that, I guess, is what I'm - what do you think would cause a man to take that boy?

A: Maybe he's got some parent problems at home, got problems at home and then, um...

Q: Like what kind of problems? What could be one of the problems the guy could have?

((0:27:00))

A: Probably has a problem at his job and he doesn't get along with his friends, and, uh, his family.

Q: Okay. What kinds of problems with his family do you think he might have?

A: I - like child abuse or - or, uh, that - what's that word I'm looking for? Um, molesting, child molesting.

Q: You think that the guy who took Jacob may have been molested by his own parents?

A: I think that...

Q: Which parent do you think would have molested him?

A: I think the parents of the abductor would do, you know, very wrong things, something unpleasant.

Q: Like what?

A: Like, uh, child abuse, you know.

Q: What kinds of things would they do with child abuse, do you think?

A: Uh, they'd just beat him up, you know, he's full of bruises and, uh, I've heard about...

((0:28:00))

A: ...child abuse when, uh, a parent had a knife, a sharp, um, knife, kitchen knife.

Q: Mm-hm.

A: And stabbed someone with it. You know, just for...

Q: So you think...

A: ...doing something that...

Q: Hey, (Dave), you think this guy may have had those - maybe had some problems at home and at work. What kind of problems would he be getting in at work, do you think would be likely?

A: If, uh, well, like stealing, you know.

Q: Do you think he's happy at work?

A: I don't think he's very happy at work.

Q: Is he happy ever, do you think? What do you think his main source of unhappiness is?

A: I think it's just himself.

Q: Not happy with himself?

A: Yeah, he's not - no, not very.

Q: What do you think would make him happy?

A: I think just to get help, you know.

((0:29:00))

Q: What kind of help?

A: Uh, just professional, yeah, like, uh, going to a - like a - like a - something like similar to like an AA meeting, where you have parents getting together and working it out.

Q: (Dave), you think this guy, do you think he loves his parents?

A: I don't think - I don't think his parents love him.

Q: Okay. Well, do you think...

A: That's why he would do that.

Q: Do you think he loves his parents well?

A: I think he does.

Q: Do you think he'd ever tell on his parents?

A: I don't think he'd tattle on them.

Q: You don't think - you think he's just living, enduring this? I mean what are you trying - he's - he's...

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: ...so you think he might have - this guy may have taken Jacob, trying to get back at his parents or what are - what are you saying?

A: Oh, boy.

((0:30:00))

A: I just think he has troubles at home, just...

Q: You said - you still think he lives...

A: ...his parents.

Q: ...with his folks, you mean?

A: I think he just - wasn't his fault, so he - his parents.

Q: That kind of what you mean (unintelligible)?

A: (Unintelligible), yeah, 'cause I've heard about kids having mean parents.

Q: What - what do you - what do you think this guy feels about what happened with Jacob?

A: What the parents feel?

Q: No, what - what...

A: Or what...

Q: ...does this guy think about, the guy who took Jacob, what does he feel about it, do you think?

A: I think deep down inside he feels that - that he shouldn't have done it, and he should bring the boy back.

Q: Can he bring the boy back, do you think? What do you think happened to the boy, (Dave)?

A: I think he's still around here. I...

((0:31:00))

A: ...I - my guess would be he's just, um, tied up somewhere.

Q: And you don't think the boy's dead or anything?

A: No, huh-uh, I think he's tied up somewhere and, um, left hostage in an abandoned building or someplace.

Q: Yeah, but he'd freeze to death, wouldn't he?

A: Yeah.

Q: Do you think he's still around St. (Jo) somewhere?

A: I think he's out of town...

Q: By out...

A: ...of the township, I mean.

Q: Somewhere nearby though, huh?

A: Yeah, like around Waite Park, St. Cloud, and Avon, places like that.

Q: You think he's still alive, huh?

A: Yeah.

Q: How would the guy keep him warm and feed him and such?

A: Well, see how it's cold, you know, he carries around in a vehicle. If he's really got a vehicle and...

Q: 4 degrees out last night, the boy would freeze to death, wouldn't he, unless he was in a heated place?

A: Yeah.

Q: You think the guy could have maybe killed Jacob?

((0:32:00))

A: They maybe would have.

Q: How do you think he would have done that?

A: Probably just shoot him, 'cause the guy had a gun, and he could have just pulled the trigger and shot him, or...

Q: Who are some of your friends, (Dave)?

A: From school?

Q: Yeah, from now that you pal around with.

A: There's one I know of named (Joel Brown). He's adopted, his adopted father, stepfather's last name is (Galtin), but we pal around, his - him and his - me and his son, we pal around with each other.

Q: How old is this (Brown) guy?

A: He's my age, he's 27, 26.

Q: What's his last name, did you say?

A: Um, (Brown).

Q: Where does he live?

A: In St. (Jo), just on the east - east side of town of St. (Jo) there.

Q: Okay. He's about...

((0:33:00))

Q: ...and he has a son, you mean?

A: Yeah, this (Galtin) guy.

Q: How old...

A: But he goes by the last name of (Brown).

Q: Okay.

A: This boy.

Q: Why does he do that?

A: Mm, why does he (unintelligible)? Um...

Q: You said he - he goes by the name (Brown).

A: Oh, he just - yeah, his - he had a father that died in an accident, a farming accident, a tractor tipped over and crushed him to death.

Q: So (Gil) was his step-dad then?

A: Yeah, and he had a father or his first father died, last name of (Brown), and...

Q: Are you thinking of getting married or anything?

A: His...

Q: No, are you - are you thinking...

A: Oh, me?

Q: Yeah.

A: I've...

Q: Well, (Eric), you're married, right?

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: Poor guy.

Q: You think of getting married someday in the future or not, or you avoid those problems?

A: I just see girls.

Q: Huh?

A: Just see other girls.

Q: You seeing any now, (Dave)?

A: Yeah, I just see one.

((0:34:00))

Q: Who - who you (unintelligible)?

A: Um, someone from St. Cloud.

Q: What's her name?

A: I forget her name.

Q: Oh, you - you taking her out on dates or...

A: I just take her out to, um, movies or something.

Q: Yeah. What do you think her name is? Do you remember her?

A: I just met her a little while ago, and...

Q: Yeah, you better ask her name though before you start...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...spending too much money now, huh?

A: Yeah.

Q: Right?

A: Yeah.

Q: What does she look like, (Dave)?

A: Blonde hair, blue eyes.

Q: Good looking?

A: Very good looking.

Q: How old?

A: She's 25.

Q: How'd you meet her/

A: Met her in a bar. Yeah, at a bar.

Q: What bar did you meet her in? Here I thought you didn't drink?

A: Down - down at - no, I met her at a bar in St. (Jo)'s, El Paso Club.

Q: Okay.

A: It's...

Q: But you don't remember her name?

A: Uh, no. It's just been a little while since I met her, so...

Q: Did you go to a movie yet...

((0:35:00))

Q: ...with her, or are you...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...planning on it?

A: I like to take her out like Friday night.

Q: Have you - have you yet though or...

A: No.

Q: You're just kind of think to the side...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...about taking her out, huh?

A: Yeah.

Q: Well, where would you like to take her?

A: Uh, take her out to a show and after that, take her to like Pizza Hut.

Q: When are you gonna ask her out, (Dave)?

Q1: Friday (unintelligible)?

A: Friday, yeah.

Q: This Friday?

A: Yeah, this Friday.

Q: Do you think you - you have her phone number where you can do this?

A: Yeah, uh...

Q: What - what do you think, you're gonna get along pretty good with her?

A: Well, I've had some friends that have had breakups with their girlfriends, and then they've gotten another one and - and, uh, just...

Q: You never know, huh?

A: ...rushed on, yeah, drifted along.

Q: How many have you...

A: Uh-huh.

Q: ...dated quite a few gals, or are you kind of just waiting for the right one?

A: The first one.

Q: Yeah.

A: Waiting on the first one 'cause...

Q: You're getting up there - you're 27 though, right?

A: Yeah.

((0:36:00))

Q: Haven't you been thinking about these gals lately?

A: Yeah.

Q: What do you think about them?

A: I think they'd make great wives.

Q: How about you...

A: Uh-huh.

Q: ...your mom, I mean, how old is your mom now?

A: She's mid 50's, 55.

Q: How old is your dad?

A: He's 60.

Q: Do they get along pretty good, or do they have...

A: They've had quarrels, and I've - I've been around, I don't, you know, butt in, I just stay out of it.

Q: Does it bother you, their quarreling?

A: Yeah, 'cause, you know, they - it's mostly about, you know, my dad's problems, you know. It's always him, him, him, not always my mom 'cause...

Q: Are these your natural parents, (Dave)?

A: Yeah, these are my real parents.

Q: Okay. What kind of problems does your mom think your dad has?

A: Well, my dad's a - he's a - he's a choir member, and he's always out late, he's never home on time, you know.

Q1: So they got in an argument even on Sunday evening?

A: Yeah, they - they - they got in an argument that night when...

((0:37:00))

Q1: Yeah.

A: ...Jacob...

Q1: 'Cause he got home late, didn't he?

Q: Tell us about that argument, if you would. What happened?

A: I don't know.

Q1: Did you hear it?

A: Yeah, I heard it. Just a few, you know, like mad.

Q: Well, that night did you hear what they were arguing about?

A: Yeah. It's mostly about my dad's going out, you know, too late and, you know, not being home on time, or what my mom wants.

Q: Where do you think your dad was that night? What was he doing?

A: That night he had to go to, um, choir sing along. They - down in the city, it's - everybody all gathers together and has a big sing along at a church, or...

Q: What time did he get home then, (Dave)?

A: This was roughly 10 o'clock.

Q: Were you home when he got there?

A: I was home when he got home, yeah.

Q: Okay. Were you upstairs or where were you?

A: I was downstairs the whole night.

((0:38:00))

Q: Okay. What - what do you hear then when you got home?

A: I heard loud - you know, my mom was crying, you know. My dad was, you know, (unintelligible).

Q: Yeah, but didn't she know he'd be gone that night - day? I mean here it's choir, right?

A: Yeah.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: (Unintelligible) got (unintelligible).

Q: But well, what'd your mom say to him? What could you hear?

A: "Why don't you - " I've heard like my mom say, "Why don't you ever take me out wherever I want to go, like to, uh, um, a good movie, a good hilarious, you know, something with a good sense of humor to it, one of those kind of shows, and ever, uh, promise me to fix things that I want to have fixed," like, you know, we have a faucet in the kitchen that's always dripping all the time. It's got leaks in it. He just never gets around to fixing, you know, what my mom wants, and at that time - at that faucet too, that keeps breaking down.

((0:39:00))

Q: So what'd he - what'd your dad reply to her that night? Had he been drinking at all or anything?

A: No, he hadn't been drinking.

Q: Doesn't he drink?

A: He drinks but he doesn't come home real drunk...

Q: Okay.

A: ...every night.

Q: What did he say to her when she's harping on him?

A: "Why don't you never take me to a - a dan- you know..."

Q: Yeah, but what'd your dad say when, you know, your mom's harping on him...

A: Oh.

Q: ..."Take me places, do things," what was his answer? Was he pretty upset?

A: Yeah, he got upset and he started saying, 'Oh, yeah, okay, I promise, I'll - I'll do it for you, and I promise I'll - I'll take care of the kitchen appliances when they get broken, and like the leaky faucet that needs to be fixed.

Q: How long did they argue for? Did you listen to all this , or didn't you get disgusted and say, "Oh, the hell with it," and go sit outside under a tree?

A: I just - I had the TV on, I want to turn it up louder.

Q: Yeah.

((0:40:00))

A: Drown out the...

Q: Okay.

A: ...argument.

Q: What time do you think they went to bed then, (Dave)?

A: This was 11:30. Later, yeah, 'cause it was 11:30.

Q: How long did they fight for?

A: I'd say like 35 minutes.

Q: That bother you when they do that?

A: Yeah.

Q: A lot?

A: Yeah, it was - I got a younger sister that moved out. Now I can move out one of these days.

Q: When did she move out?

A: She moved out, uh, it was '88, fall of '88.

Q: How old is she, (Dave)?

A: She's 22 right now.

Q: Your dad ever beat you with a stick or anything?

A: No.

Q: He ever - do you think your parents would ever kind of, you know, bothered you or abused you, physically?

A: They never bothered me at all.

Q: Okay. Has anyone ever sexually abused you?

A: No.

Q: No gals have taken advantage of you, have they?

((0:41:00))

A: No, no, not - not yet, no.

Q: No? Okay. Uh, have you ever met a - a guy that was homosexual or, you know, gay?

A: I've met a few - I've met a couple guys outside of home that - they had like - they were real jerks.

Q: Yeah?

A: They came to where I work at because they're like, "Hey, man, how about, you know, hanging out with me," you know hanging out with me and stuff, "Let's go bond." like...

Q: Why? What...

A: You know, one of these - it was a college kid, you know.

Q: Yeah?

A: He couldn't tell, you know, how old I was.

Q: Yeah.

A: But, you know, "Hey, man, how about hanging out?" you know, "hanging out with me and stuff? We'll goof off."

Q: You just didn't want to hang around him?

A: Yeah. Yeah, I just said, "Get away from me," you know, "Quit bothering."

Q: Did he go home at all I mean? Did he say that he was coming back, or just one time?

A: Just one time.

Q: Just one time?

A: Yeah. Drove past.

Q: Hey, you ever heard about Jacob's bike being stolen?

A: Jacob's bike? No, huh-uh.

Q: Okay.

A: No.

Q: What kind of car does your dad have?

A: He drives a Buick.

((0:42:00))

A: Uh, it's probably a medium-size car.

Q: What color is it?

A: It's light brown.

Q: Four-door or what?

A: Four-door.

Q: Is it a fancier Buick or not?

A: It's (unintelligible). Sort of half - half, um, fancy, 'cause I don't know what year it is, but it's a nice car. I've driven it a few times to St. Cloud and back.

Q: Did your dad ever get on your case about not dating gals or anything?

A: No, he never...

Q: He's a smart man for his - why do you need these problems, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: He's like, you know, why I keep my mouth shut. I don't butt into their conversations that they...

Q: (Dave), do you really...

A: ...um...

Q: ...you saw a guy out there that night?

A: I think I did.

Q: What do you think he was doing?

A: I think he was just walking around, you know, walking around, looking for someplace to get away from - like he was getting away from...

((0:43:00))

A: ...someone that was chasing him.

Q1: Was he running though?

A: Yeah, he was running.

Q1: He was running, huh?

A: Yeah, he was walking around and he was running again.

Q: And this was after Jacob was taken, you think?

A: Yeah, I think it was right after.

Q1: How late did you stay up that night? Did...

A: 'Til 11:30 or 12:00, so...

Q: So what did you do the next day, (Dave)?

A: The day after, I just stuck around and watched, uh, other people pass - people pass by, they were searching the area, they were going in people's yards and they were doing all - finding clues out, like, uh...

Q: What kind of clues do you think they may have found?

A: Oh, some socks. He might have, you know, the doctor might have taken some clothing off Jacob and hid them somewhere.

Q: Do you think they found anything like that?

A: Someone told me there was, uh, uh, someone found a sock in a ditch...

((0:44:00))

A: ...not too far from my place, and there was - there was a sock found.

Q: Did you put it there, David?

A: No.

Q: (Dave), do you think some people suspect that you may have taken Jacob? You think no one suspects of that?

A: No.

Q: Did you take him?

A: Hm-mm.

Q: You're sure you couldn't have...

A: I'm sure, yeah.

Q: See, you're one of the guys that kind of likes Jacob a lot.

A: Yeah.

Q: And, you know...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...because you're one of the few guys that watched Jacob in that way, you know, and constantly kind of interested in him. You know, we've been investigating for how long, and you see all this stuff? That's - that's your stuff...

A: Yeah.

Q: ...kind of referencing back to you and watching Jacob, and I'm a little concerned about that - I don't know if (Eric) is, but I am.

A: Yeah.

Q: 'Cause see, of all the boys there, you watched Jacob all the time. That's a little confusing to us. How do you...

A: I don't...

Q: ...explain that?

A: I don't - you know, I don't start, you know...

((0:45:00))

A: ...harassing him or anything.

Q: No, but you watched him all the time.

A: Yeah, I like - I like to watch, you know, kids get along together, you know, have some friends. I've had friends - I know a couple friends with me that watch Jacob and his - I forgot to tell you that, I've had friends with me at times, watching...

Q: Who are they?

A: ...the boys. That brown boy I told you about, and, um, there's another one, (Rassier), that lives not too far from...

Q: Which (Rassier)?

A: (Bob Rassier)'s son.

Q: What's - how old is he?

A: He's my age.

Q: So he watched the boys with you?

A: Mm-hm, sure.

Q: Did you go clear into their neighborhood to watch them or where?

A: No, we just walked by the - on - on the streets there, see them playing.

Q: Down in, uh, their neighborhood?

A: Down in that neighborhood.

Q: Would he talk - did (Rassier) ever talk about Jacob?

A: No, he just...

((0:46:00))

A: ...told me, you know, they were neighborhood kids, they really get along together.

Q1: What about when you went to watch hockey or - or soccer, did anybody go with you then, when you went to North Community, when you went to - in town to St. (Jo) there?

A: Yeah.

Q1: Anybody come with you then to watch?

A: Yeah, a couple boys.

Q1: Yeah?

A: That I went to school with, a couple.

Q1: Who were they?

A: Guys - those same ones that are - we pal around a lot.

Q1: What - what are their names?

A: The (Rassier) boy and...

Q: (Daniel)?

A: Uh, his name is (Tony Rassier).

Q: (Tony) was with you?

A: Yeah.

Q: And what about this (Brown)'s first name?

A: (Joe Brown).

Q: (Joe Brown)? How old is he?

A: He's 27.

Q: Okay. Does (Rassier) date anyone, (Tony)?

A: He's had girlfriends and then they broke up, yeah.

Q: How about this, uh, this, uh, (Brown) guy?

A: Yeah, he was going out with this girl, I remember for - when I was oh, a bit younger, like in junior high, there was a girl that used to...

((0:47:00))

A: ...stop by our place, and we'd pal around, you know. Had fun, you know, we played hide-and-seek and stuff like that, and, uh, Annie, Annie, Over.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: You know...

Q1: Over the (unintelligible).

A: Yeah. Yeah, throw a bottle over the...

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: ...garage and...

Q1: Okay.

A: ...play tag and stuff like that, and a lot of things.

Q: Who do you think took the boy?

A: I think it'd be someone from St. (Jo).

Q: Why?

A: It's...

Q: Who do you know that didn't take that boy? Who can you tell us in this room today positively didn't take the boy?

((0:48:00))

A: I know exact - that (Rassier) didn't take him, and...

Q: Okay. How do you know that?

A: 'Cause he drives a pickup truck. He drives a blue - blue Chevy pickup.

Q: He does?

A: Yeah.

Q: (Tony) does?

A: Yeah.

Q1: What does that have to do with anything though? What do you mean, just because he drives a truck, how come you don't think he took him?

A: I don't - I don't think he'd take him.

Q1: You talk to him since then?

A: Oh, yeah, I've talked with him.

Q1: Has he said anything about it?

A: No.

Q1: No?

Q: What does (Tony) look like? Tell (Eric) and me what he looks like.

A: He's got blonde hair, it's curly. He - he's grown a mustache a few times, and never had one, he - he didn't - he don't even have a mustache.

Q1: Mm-hm. Has he ever - is he an avid hunter or anything?

A: He goes hunting - he goes deer hunting with his dad...

Q1: Does he?

A: ...a couple - yeah, he's got like...

((0:49:00))

A: ...four brothers. They go together out in Canada and...

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: ...and go deer hunting up there, and...

Q1: Does (Tony) live around when you were over there?

A: I - not - I never asked him if he's still living with his parents or not, but I just see him drive up the road.

Q1: Yeah?

A: To his parents' place...

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: ...sometimes.

Q1: Do you think he might still live there?

A: I think he moved out.

Q1: Did he?

A: Yeah. Lived on (unintelligible) - I think it was in St. Cloud.

Q1: Does he?

A: Yeah.

Q1: Does he work anywhere?

A: He worked for, uh, Hydraulic - Central Hydraulics.

Q1: Mm-hm.

A: He worked for them and - or Central (McDowell), and I don't know where he works now. The - the - the time I met him, he - he worked for Central (McDowell) and, you know, I don't know if he...

Q1: Did he quit do you think, or did they fire him, or...

A: I think he's - I think he's still there.

((0:50:00))

Q1: Is he? When's the last time you saw him?

A: Oh, this is around August of this year already.

Q1: Oh, you haven't - you haven't seen him after Jacob's been taken?

A: I haven't seen him around, no.

Q1: You haven't seen him since then? Has it been that long, it been three or four months since you've seen him?

A: Oh, yeah.

Q1: You talk to him on the phone at all?

A: No, I've been going out to the bars.

Q1: Mm, you see him (unintelligible) bars, usually?

A: Yeah, meet him downtown.

Q1: Okay.

Q: You do a little drinking, huh? What do you like to drink?

A: I get daily brandy and Coke.

Q: All right, that's a good drink.

A: 7-Up or...

Q: See, (Dave), if we caught this guy tomorrow, what do you think should happen to him?

A: I suggested capital punishment.

Q: Like well, what if he needs help and he's sick? May- you think he ever deserves a second chance?

A: I think he - I don't think he should 'cause he might, you know, kidnap a kid again.

((0:51:00))

Q: Okay. Well, that's a good answer.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: I like that one. He should be iced, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Do you remember everything you do, usually? You don't blackout or anything, do you?

A: No.

Q: I mean you could sit in here and say, "Look, (Eric), (Danny)..."

A: Uh-huh.

Q: If we asked you, "Did you take that boy, Jacob?"

A: No.

Q1: You don't take any medication or anything, do you, for anything?

A: Huh-uh, no.

Q1: You ever had any counseling or anything from anyone, on anything, any type of subject, any problem with your family, or any problems you might have had with any women or anything? You have any type of counseling or anything for that?

A: Not on them, no.

Q1: No? Anything else?

A: Mm-mm.

Q1: No? You never talked to any type of counselor for anything else?

A: No.

Q1: Okay.

Q: (Dave), did you ever have - I'm - and this is between us in this room. Did you ever have any fantasies about boys or anything?

A: No, I never did.

((0:52:00))

Q: If you'd describe yourself, which would you - you know, and this - it ain't going out of this room. Do you remember wondering, Jesus, I wonder what's wrong, I'm kind of attracted to men or boys? Who would you say you're attracted to?

A: If I were attracted to boys?

Q: No, who are you attracted to? If you could go with anyone you could, who would you go with?

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Male or female?

A: Female.

Q: Okay. No question in your mind, you'd rather go out with a gal, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: I would. Well, sure, it's fun to have, you know, or, you know, not real cool stuff with, you know, two guys get, you know, close like, you know, like I've seen before.

Q: Have you ever gotten - has that ever happened where you were younger, where some guy took advantage of you that way or not? It happens to a lot of young boys, you know.

((0:53:00))

A: Just that time that I told you about, when I met that one guy that - that harassed, you know.

Q1: Liquor store?

Q: Did he - did he do anything sexual with you?

A: No, he just said something, you know.

Q: Sexual remark?

A: No, no, just say, "Hey, you want to hang around and...

Q: Okay.

A: ...goof around and..."

Q: Is there anything else you think you can tell (Eric) and myself that might help us resolve this case?

A: Like, um...

Q1: About anything, any person, anything you think might have happened that we don't know about already, or about anything about the - about Jacob?

A: Can't think of anything right now.

Q: Okay. Well, hey, (Dave), I appreciate you coming in.

((0:54:00))

A: Okay.

Q: Hey, and we - don't feel bad about us talking to you again. We're talking, David - our (unintelligible) is we're talking to everyone again. In fact, you're one of the last ones we talked to 'cause you were pretty helpful, (Eric) said and, you know, we're asking everyone the same questions. We're not singling you out at all, okay?

A: Oh, okay.

Q: And I mean I can guarantee you that.

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. And, uh, what we'd like you to do is, you know, consider that hey, you helped us out, you came in, you saved us some time today.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Is that - you - you feel comfortable with being here, or some of the questioning bother you a little bit?

A: Yeah, some of it bothered me a little, but...

Q1: Yeah.

Q: That's no biggie, it's a serious deal, a boy is gone, right?

A: Yeah.

Q: And that's what really counts. Okay, we're not - we don't want you to leave here, so oh, my God, why are they asking me these? We're asking everyone these questions - we have to, (Dave).

A: Oh, okay.

Q: Okay. And I appreciate you coming in. Good luck with your date.

A: Okay.

Q: Don't get in trouble with her now, you know.

A: No, I won't.

Q: Trying to be kissing her and making out with her on the first date.

((0:55:00))

A: All right.

Q: Wait for at least the second date and, you know.

A: Okay.

Q: Okay?

A: All right.

Q: Thanks, (Dave).

A: Thank you.

Q1: Yeah. We'll see you.

A: Nice to meet you.

Q: Yeah, nice meeting you.

Q1: I'll give you (unintelligible).

Q: Thanks for bringing him down, we appreciate your help.

A: Okay.

Q1: And we'll check out some of those things you told us about.

A: Okay. About the - the - oops.

Q: Yeah.

A: (Unintelligible).

Q: Yeah, we'll take care of that, okay?

A: Yeah, there'll be a whole bunch of guys out there, maybe even...

Q: Yeah.

A: ...with (unintelligible) or something.

Q: Yeah, we'll see what's going on, (Dave). If anything else comes up, get ahold of (Eric) or myself, okay?

A: Oh, yeah, I remember, uh...

Q: You remember (Eric), don't you?

A: Yeah. (Link), uh...

Q1: He was the FBI agent that was with me?

A: Yeah, he, uh...

Q: He's gone now, isn't he?

Q1: Yeah.

A: He brought, um, got a pad - pad and paper along?

Q: Mm-hm, mm-hm.

A: He got something, he wrote it down.

Q: Yeah?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: Get in touch? Okay.

Q1: Yeah, or get in touch with (Eric) or something.

Q: If you remember something, okay?

A: Yeah.

Q: Thanks once again. Sorry to trouble you.

A: Oh, it's all right.

Q: Thanks. Okay, bye.

((0:56:00))

A: Bye, now.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____

HYPNOSIS INTERVIEW WITH CRYSTAL ROTH

Q=Dr. John Rhetts
Q1=(Denise)
Q2=Agt. (Molina)
A=Crystal Roth

Q: Okay. We're back after a - a second break. And, what I'd like to do is, I'd like to, um, see if we can come at the idea of just triggering your memory, in a - in a different kind of way. Not with that sequence, logical, structured kind of a way. Um, we could - we could, um, try, I think, using two things. One is, you seem to - to have what - what memories you do. Sort of - I think you said in - in flashes, or just sort of impressions...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...and do I got that right? And secondly, there was something about this car that caught your attention. Something was out of place. And that's, at least, part of why, you were drawn to it. It seemed out of place...

((0:01:00))

Q: ...there, where you saw it. And so, maybe, what we can do is, just, come at this a little bit structured way, just a little bit more free formed and not with any one thing that you're supposed to be focusing on. Maybe, it's possible, you're - you're trying too hard to do exactly what I'm saying, and what I'm saying doesn't fit very well with the way your mind works. 'Cause my mind is mine, and it's not the same as yours, no matter how close they might be (unintelligible). So, I think what I'm gonna do is - is sort of imagine that I'm kinda, uh, painting just some - with some brush strokes, here and there, and I'm not trying to paint a very precise picture. I'm just gonna make some suggestions, and you're free to depart and go your own way, at any time you feel like it. And you can go your way to have a - a flash of recall, or an impression of this or that. And you can...

((0:02:00))

Q: ...just talk about what you see. Well, there I go again. By - by what you sense, what your impression is, what - what the flash tells you. Um, and as -

as we said at the very beginning, there might be nothing that this kind of approach generates that's new. On the other hand, you may find that this does trigger something. Um, and so, let's just see if that kind of a - of approach works. It's less logical. Less - less structured. Um, I'd still like to suggest we use that very beginning part about rolling your eyes up and - and that kind of thing. Unless that - unless that bothers you.

A: No.

Q: Okay. And then I think we'll just -- I'm gonna try not to be so logical and sequence and - and structured. So, one, look up to the top of your eyebrows all the way up to the top of your head. Two, holding your eyes up, close your eyes slowly. Three, take a deep breath.

((0:03:00))

Q: Exhale, let your eyes relax and I'd like you to just let your memory, in your own way, reflect on, think about that night of Thursday the 19th of October. Where you were, what you saw, and one of the things that - that you said, was that, you noticed that something was out of place. Something was unusual. Just like, you could go into a room, and something would be out of place. You went down this road. Something was out of place. And as you, just, let your mind relax. You could find the thoughts, impressions, vague senses where a clear idea. Whatever way it comes.

((0:04:00))

Q: And something was out of place. You saw an out of place thing. As you think about it, as you let your mind go through its own process. I'd like you to, just, say what comes into your mind. It doesn't have to be in any particular sequence. It can be in impressions, feelings.

((0:05:00))

((0:06:00))

Q: (Unintelligible).

A: Mm-mm. I don't know if - I think the thing with being heavy...

((0:07:00))

A: ...kinda helped me to get there, ya know?

Q: Mm-hm.

A: I don't know, it just - now I can't even get there, ya know?

Q: Like we're trying too hard?

A: Yeah.

Q: Let's go back to the - to the heavy feeling one more time, and see if that could be, sort of, a bridge or, ya know, a pathway - that it would allow us to make that transition. And on the other hand, I just wanna say, is it's certainly very possible and very realistic - yeah.

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Oh.

Q1: (Unintelligible) car (unintelligible) car.

Q: Uh-huh.

Q1: (Unintelligible) she be in the car (unintelligible) car.

Q: Mm-hm.

Q1: Imagine that could be the car.

Q: Yeah. That's a possibility. Were you understanding what (Denise) was saying?

A: Mm-hm.

((0:08:00))

Q: Let's start with the heaviness, and see if we can do that together again. And then, if that - if you couldn't get focused on that, then we can try the idea, in the car - being in the car, other times you've been in the car, sort of like a way to step, ya know, kinda step in the stones to get back.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Okay. You wanna try it?

Q1: (Unintelligible).

Q: Yeah. Mm-hm. Yep. Are you - are you feeling okay?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay.

A: I'm just frustrated I guess.

Q: That may be - if you - can you imagine, just sort of, taking that frustration and setting it aside? It's just kind of a curious thing...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...none of us knows what the outcome should be.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Um, I don't have any, uh, divine source of knowledge about what the - what we ought to be able to do.

((0:09:00))

Q: So it's - we're just working with - with possible. And so, c- if you can imagine just setting that - picture setting that frustration, over there on the table, just on the other side of your can of Coke. And just leave it there. Is that something you think you can picture doing?

A: Yeah.

Q: Okay. Well, try it. One, look up towards your eyebrows, all the way up to the top of your head. Two, holding your eyes up, close your eyes slowly. Take a deep breath. Exhale. Let your eyes relax. I'd like you to imagine that that heavy feeling, that you felt earlier this evening, can come back. That you can sense that heavy feeling, of your body just letting down. No effort, no tension, no energy to keep things ready to do anything.

((0:10:00))

Q: You can just feel that heaviness. Relaxed. Quiet. Heavy sensation. And that's a key to yourself, your mind can grab a hold of, the mind can wrap itself around any, of a variety of, ideas, of sensations, of feelings. And another feeling that you can imagine, is the feeling of being in your car. Of driving along. You know that feeling you have, about how the seat fits, and how your feet are, in relation to the pedals. How your hands are...

((0:11:00))

Q: ...in relation to the steering wheel. And if your car is a shift car, how your hand is, in relation to that - to the n- to the shifting (unintelligible). It's an automatic, it's where you put your hands on the wheel. You know where the radio is. You know where the headlight switch is. And what it feels like to be driving along on a road. The sound your car makes, as it's driving on a smooth road, or a rough road. The sound of how much air noise you can hear, as your driving down on - say out on 94. Or driving along a city street. And you know what the car feels like, when you hit rough road. Or go around a corner, how much it leans, or how much it's stiff. And you could imagine driving on...

((0:12:00))

Q: ...a gravel road. What that noise and that feeling is like. Versus a nice smooth, brand new blacktop road. And how the seat fits your thighs and your bottom and your back and your shoulders. How you fit in that seat, 'cause it's familiar to you. And what the road looks like out the window. And what the sounds are like. What the movement of the car is like. And you can recall whatever impression you have, of what it was like to drive down 91st Street, that Thursday night, and see the car that was out of place.

((0:13:00))

Q: You went past it. It was going the same - heading the same direction you were. But it was pulled over on the side. And you had some thoughts to yourself, about what it might be doing there. And you thought of some things that you might do, and decided not to do some of them, but instead to do others. You decided to go on, rather than stop. But as you went by, you saw the car. You have some impressions about it. You have some ideas. And after you went past it, you were still kinda curious about it. And you can feel what your car felt like, as you were driving. And you were curious enough about that other car. The one that was - seemed out of place...

((0:14:00))

Q: ...to look in your rearview mirror. And you watched it. And just as you were going around the curve, you looked at it again, one last time. And you have some kinds of impressions, some kinds of notions, some kinds of ideas in your mind about that car. And as I was talking, were you able to recall any of the impressions or ideas, you have about the car.

A: Mm-mm.

Q: Okay.

((0:15:00))

A: No.

Q: Well, sometimes when I'm presented with the obvious, I'm finally willing to see it. I don't think this is working.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: I don't think this is doing much...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...to help, in any way, enhance your memory.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And, I do wanna tell you, I don't think that's good or bad, and...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...ya know, the good people don't remember things and the bad ones...

A: Yeah.

Q: It's just not that way. It's a technique that we can try. And it works for some people, and it doesn't for others. But, um, I guess one of the things that it seems as though is, requesting something doesn't enhance it, it doesn't bring it back for you, in any particular way.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: I was, sort of...

((0:16:00))

Q: ...of the opinion that, we could keep on trying different suggestions, but I think I'm - the obvious is staring me in...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...in the face with this kind of a - kind of a way of using imagination to recall something you saw, isn't expanding anything.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: Isn't increasing it. So, um, I, um, I just have a hunch that it might be appropriate to say that's where we are with this. And I - I certainly appreciate your willingness to come in and be nervous for awhile. I'm glad that that - that seems like that's gotten quite...

A: Mm-hm.

Q: ...a lot better. You don't feel so nervous now (unintelligible).

A: Yeah. I'm just tired.

Q: Yeah. Well, I hope this has had, at least, the effect of relaxing you a little bit.

A: Yeah.

Q: Um, and I really - I mean, I certainly get the sense you were trying as hard, as I could possibly ask.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: And that the - just the idea of asking you to imagine something, isn't what...

((0:17:00))

Q: ... does anything for or against your memory.

A: Mm-hm.

Q: So, I think that if, uh, Special Agent (Molina)'s still awake (unintelligible). Um, we'll end.

Q2: Okay. This - this ends it. Thank you.

The transcript has been reviewed with the audio recording submitted and it is an accurate transcription.

Signed_____